

Chapter 601

Turning It up a Notch

After pondering for a good minute, Sun Jingjing spoke in a serious voice, "To tell you the truth, I feel worried— but not in a bad way. Sister Liqing... She's the type of woman that makes other women feel inferior. She's not only beautiful but also has a great figure, and she has this mature aura that feels very soothing and elegant. If I did not already receive your family mark, I would worry that she might take you away from me."

"However, Sister Liqing... she was not always like this. She used to be more... how should I describe her? Arrogant and a little too prideful? I am not trying to talk badly about her, but that's just how the other disciples saw her in the past."

Hearing Sun Jingjing describe Su Liqing's character in the past, Su Yang smiled and said, "I know exactly what you mean. When I first met her, she was your typical Sect Elder who has this sense of superiority and absolutely despised anyone who did not respect her authority or status."

"That's it! That's exactly what I mean!" Sun Jingjing quickly said. "However, she no longer has that type of demeanor! Instead, she gives off the feeling of an experienced and elegant housewife! I think the cause of this change is her relationship with you, Su Yang. I feel like everyone that becomes affiliated with you will change one way or another, and I am speaking from my personal experience."

"You are giving me too much credit." Su Yang said. "They say people who are capable of changing are only returning to their original self."

"Even if you say that, I believe you are a major reason why we change." Sun Jingjing said.

"And speaking of change... let's change into something more comfortable..." she then began loosening his robes along with her own.

A few moments later, they were fully naked with Sun Jingjing on top of Su Yang.

"I don't want to lose to Sister Liqing," she suddenly said to him.

Su Yang showed her a smile and spoke while caressing her face, "No matter your differences, I love you all the same. You don't have to compete with her because I will give you as much attention as I will give to everyone else."

"I know you will, but this is my own pride as a woman. I may not be as experienced as the others, nor am I anything special, but I still want to do my best." Sun Jingjing said before kissing him on the lips.

"Mmmm..."

After kissing passionately for a few minutes, Sun Jingjing moved from his mouth to the raging boner between his legs and began kissing that.

"Mmmm~"

Sun Jingjing gently sucked on the thick shaft while licking him inside with her soft tongue.

"You can cum inside my mouth, Su Yang," she said to him.

"Mmm..."

"Mmmmm~"

After a few minutes of sucking, Sun Jingjing could feel the shaft growing hotter and becoming stiffer.

A few more moments later, hot Yang Qi shot out of the shaft and directly into her mouth.

"Mmm!"

Sun Jingjing immediately began swallowing the overflowing Yang Qi, feeling a hot sensation flowing down her throat and into her stomach.

"Haa... haaa... haaaa..." Sun Jingjing panted heavily afterward.

"Lay down. I'll please you now." Su Yang suddenly stood up and said to her.

Sun Jingjing nodded her head and laid on the bed with her slender legs spread wide open, revealing every inch of her cave to him.

Seeing the beautiful pink slit, Su Yang immediately approached it with his mouth, and he began to skillfully caress the meat with his tongue.

"Ahhh~!"

Sun Jingjing moaned in an erotic voice, and her entire body twitched with delight with a tingly feeling coursing through every inch of her body.

Slurping noises quickly filled the room as Su Yang savored Sun Jingjing's wet paradise.

"I'm cumming, Su Yang!"

Sun Jingjing said to him before her hole gushed with sparkling liquid.

However, Su Yang did not move and continued to lick her little sister, allowing her Yin Qi to shower him.

"Haaa... haaa..." Sun Jingjing panted afterward.

Once the holy rain was over, Su Yang stood up and rubbed his thick shaft against Sun Jingjing's slit, coating his sword with her Yin Qi.

"I'm putting it in." Su Yang said to her as he pushed the tip of his shaft into her tight cave, spreading the slit wide open.

"Ahhh!" Sun Jingjing's eyes rolled back just from experiencing just the tip of his shaft, feeling her small cave spreading wider and wider as Su Yang's sword pierced deeper into her body.

Once his entire shaft was inside Sun Jingjing's body, Su Yang began thrusting his hips, moving back and forth in a rhythmic manner.

"You're tighter than usual," he said to her with a smile, feeling her inner walls tightly squeezing his shaft.

"I've doubled my training, after all."

"Oh? Then let's see if that training paid off."

Su Yang suddenly changed his movements and moved much fiercer than before.

"Ahhhh~ This is amazing!" Sun Jingjing said with an expression filled with bliss and pleasure.

"I'm going to turn it up a notch." Su Yang said to her.

A few seconds later, Sun Jingjing began moaning even louder— much louder than she has ever before.

"W-What is this feeling?! What is happening?! This is different from anything I have experienced before!" Sun Jingjing thought she was imagining things at first, but after feeling it for a little bit longer, she was certain that Su Yang's shaft had suddenly grown bigger!

Sun Jingjing decided to lift her head to look at her stomach, and sure enough, the bump on her stomach was much larger than usual!

"What do you think? Do you like it?" Su Yang asked her with a smile on his face.

"I love it! I love it very much! Whatever you are doing, I want you to continue doing it!" Sun Jingjing spoke in a voice filled with excitement, and she even started moving her hips on her own.

Chapter 602 - Entrusting Her Body to Him

"Ahn!"

"Ahhhn!"

"Ooooh!"

Sun Jingjing m.o.a.ned loudly as something more massive than usual passionately brushed against the soft inner walls of her sacred cave, feeling as though her inner walls were being spread to its limits.

A few minutes later, when Sun Jingjing reached her limits, Su Yang released his Yang Qi deep into her body, filling every inch of her cave with a sticky white substance.

"Ahhhhh~!"

Sun Jingjing released a sharp m.o.a.n simultaneously, and her flower sprayed with Yin Qi.

"Haaa... haa... haaa..." Sun Jingjing panted heavily, feeling as though she was losing her consciousness.

After catching her breath sometime later, she asked him in a bewildered voice, "What on earth was that just now, Su Yang?!"

"Why don't you see for yourself?" Su Yang said to her.

"..."

Sun Jingjing slightly lifted herself to look at the rod between his legs.

"W-What?! How is that possible?!" A gaping hole appeared on Sun Jingjing's face after seeing the size of his shaft that was much larger than she can recall.

"If you are surprised with just that, look at what else I can do..."

Su Yang suddenly said, and right before her eyes, his shaft began growing longer and thicker.

"..."

Sun Jingjing watched with her eyes as wide as saucers, looking as though she was witnessing something impossible.

"What... how..." she was so speechless that she couldn't even find the words to ask him about it.

"This technique is called 'Myriad Transformation', and it's a technique I'd created after taking inspiration from another transformation technique. With this technique, I can extend or increase the size of certain parts of my body as I desire, even changing its shape." Su Yang explained to her.

"I-Is there a limit to that technique?" Sun Jingjing asked him in a dazed voice.

"Not that I know of." Su Yang shook his head.

Sun Jingjing was speechless. Does this mean he can change the size and shape of his little brother however he pleases? This essentially means that he can please any woman in this world without any limitations, as he can simply transform his p.e.n.i.s to perfectly fit whichever hole it's inside! This is, without doubt, the pinnacle of dual cultivation techniques for a man!

"Do you want to experience it again?" Su Yang suddenly asked her, who was staring at his shaft with a yearning gaze.

"Y-Yes!" Sun Jingjing wasted no time nodding her head and spreading her legs.

Su Yang smiled and inserted his shaft into her cave again.

He then used Myriad Transformation to adjust the size and shape of his p.e.n.i.s until it fitted Sun Jingjing's cave perfectly, leaving no space untouched.

Sun Jingjing could feel her little sister drooling uncontrollably, and her heart was filled with anticipation.

"Oh, Heavens!"

When Su Yang began moving, Sun Jingjing nearly went crazy from the intense pleasure coming from her hole, feeling as though she'd just entered heaven. It was a whole new level of pleasure that she was not expecting.

However, because of the overwhelming pleasure, she was only able to enjoy it for a little over a minute before Su Yang had to pull his shaft out of her body.

"W-Why did you stop, Su Yang?" she asked him with a puzzled expression, her voice filled with sadness, sounding almost like a deprived child who just had candy stolen straight from her mouth.

"You won't be able to handle more than a minute of this technique at your current state, or it might permanently affect your mind. If you want to experience more of this technique for a longer duration, you'll have to improve your endurance."

"Then are there any methods that'll help me improve my endurance faster?" she quickly asked him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Naturally, there are methods to improve your endurance quickly, but I do not recommend doing so, as it might harm your body in the process. Don't worry, Jingjing. As long as you

continue to cultivate with me normally, your endurance will naturally improve, and before you know it, you'll be able to handle the Myriad Transformation for hours without rest."

"But won't that take a long time?" Sun Jingjing sighed. "Now that I've experienced such a divine technique, I will no longer be satisfied with anything else..."

Hearing her words, Su Yang smiled and said, "If you think the Myriad Transformation is the pinnacle of my abilities then I will have to disappoint you. The Myriad Transformation is only the tip of the iceberg, and as your endurance improves, I will also increase the pleasure you feel."

"Really...?" Sun Jingjing looked at him with wide eyes.

"Why would I lie to you?" Su Yang said to her, and he suddenly grabbed her hands and pinned her body to the bed.

"But since you want to improve your endurance so much, I can help you with that. However, it's not going to be easy. In fact, it might even break you a little."

Seeing the sadistic smile on Su Yang's face, Sun Jingjing swallowed nervously.

However, she still smiled and said, "I know that you're trying your best to hold back your real abilities, Su Yang. Even though you are always satisfying your partners, you cannot fully satisfy yourself because you are afraid of breaking us. That's why I want to improve myself as fast as possible— so that I can relieve some of your restraints."

"Jingjing..." A warm expression appeared on Su Yang's handsome face, and he said, "Even if that's true, I do not wish to see you harming yourself for my sake. If anything, I should be the one to bear that responsibility."

"Please, Su Yang. I insist. And I trust that you won't harm me," she said to him.

After a moment of pondering, Su Yang nodded. "Okay, then let's do it. If it becomes too painful to bear, let me know."

"Then I will entrust my body to you, Su Yang." Sun Jingjing said as she relaxed her body, giving Su Yang full access to her body.

Sometime later, Su Yang inserted his shaft into Sun Jingjing and began moving his h.i.p.s.

Chapter 603 - One in Ten Thousand Women

"Ahhhhh~!"

Sun Jingjing moaned wildly as Su Yang pounded her tight cave with passion for over an hour straight, feeling as though her entire body was burning from pleasure.

"I'm c.u.m.m.i.n.g! I'm c.u.m.m.i.n.g again!" she shouted.

"Ahhhhh!"

Sun Jingjing panted heavily afterward. She had climaxed so many times during the past hour that she has long lost count.

"Haaa... haaaa... haaa..."

Su Yang stopped moving to let Sun Jingjing rest. However, the breaks did not last very long, and Su Yang began moving his h.i.p.s before Sun Jingjing could fully recover from her previous climax.

"Ahhhhh~!" Sun Jingjing tightly grasped the bedsheets, her body trembled uncontrollably, and she released another round of Yin Qi a few moments later.

However, Su Yang did not stop his movements this time and continued to thrust his shaft into her body, stimulating the pleasure even further.

Although Sun Jingjing was releasing her Yin Qi every few minutes, it felt to her as though she was constantly climaxing every second without any breaks, yet she did not tell Su Yang to stop, fully indulging herself in this endless cycle of pleasure.

A few more hours had passed since they started cultivating, yet the two of them remained on the bed and embracing each other.

However, Sun Jingjing was no longer m.o.a.ning, as she had long lost her voice from m.o.a.ning too much, and her body was soaked in sweat, looking as though she'd just left a bathtub filled with water.

A few more minutes later, Sun Jingjing suddenly cried out loud. However, it was not the usual pleasant-sounding voice but a painful one instead.

And hearing this painful cry, Su Yang immediately stopped moving and said, "This is your limit. If I continue any further, it will really harm your body."

Sun Jingjing did not respond and merely nodded her head slightly, as that was all of the energy she could muster at this moment.

Su Yang then removed his shaft from her body and went to retrieve his storage ring.

A few moments later, he returned to Sun Jingjing's side with a pill in his hand.

He then tossed the pill into his own mouth and crushed it into tiny pieces, before drinking some water and kissing Sun Jingjing, pushing the melted pill into her mouth and down her throat.

The pill did not immediately help Sun Jingjing recover, so he carried her to the bathroom to wash her body in the meantime.

After washing the sweat and his Yang Qi off her body, Su Yang retrieved a clean bed from his storage ring and exchanged it for the dirty one before gently laying her body on it.

A few minutes later, when Sun Jingjing recovered enough energy to speak, she said to him in a low voice, "I thought that I would be able to pleasure you for half a day at least, but alas..."

"Don't worry about it, you did great for someone who's not used to hardcore cultivation." Su Yang said to her with a smile.

"Tell me the truth, Su Yang... How much of your true ability did you use just now?" she asked him.

"About thirty percent." Su Yang said.

"Thirty percent..." Sun Jingjing laughed in a dispirited manner and sighed afterward, "Looks like I am still very far away from accepting all of you."

"Don't look so down. Out of the countless people I have embraced in my previous life, only a handful of people were able to handle me at 90%, much less 100%. In fact, only one in ten thousand women can handle me above 30% even after knowing me for one year."

Sun Jingjing looked at him with a dazed face. Just how many women did he have s.e.x with that allowed him to make out such a statistic? It must be in the hundreds of thousands!

"Get some good rest tonight. Although it may take some time, you'll eventually be able to handle me at my best, and when that time comes, I'll let you experience the pinnacle of pleasure."

"The pinnacle of pleasure..." Sun Jingjing mumbled to herself with her heart filled with anticipation.

'I'm also going to be stricter on myself in training so that I won't fall behind even when we leave this place. Whether it be Sister Liqing or anyone else in the family, I won't lose to them!' Sun Jingjing swore in her heart with a resolute face.

Su Yang left the place a few moments later, and Sun Jingjing fell asleep shortly later. However, because of the hardcore experience today, she will need some time to fully recover, restricting her cultivation for a while.

After leaving Sun Jingjing's place, Su Yang did not return to the Yin Yang Pavilion and instead went to the Medicine Hall.

"Sect Master!"

The disciples inside immediately greeted him.

"Are you here for our Master? She's currently upstairs." They quickly said to him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Once I am finished with her, I'll cultivate with you girls if you want."

"Eh?"

The disciples there stared at him with dazed expressions.

"After all, I never managed to fulfill my promise to cultivate with you girls because of the incident with the Million Snakes Sect. If you don't want to, that's fine too." Su Yang said to them as he approached the staircase.

"W-We want to cultivate with you!" The disciples hastily responded as if they feared that he might suddenly change his mind.

Su Yang nodded, "I will let your Master know later."

Once Su Yang went upstairs, all of the disciples there celebrated by jumping up and down, filling the place with joyous laughter and loud noises.

Meanwhile, when Su Liqing heard the commotion downstairs, she prepared to head downstairs to see what had happened, but after seeing Su Yang at the door, she quickly gave up that thought and said to him, "What did you say to my disciples to cause such a commotion?"

"I promised them that I'd cultivate with them later," he said with a smile.

"No wonder..." she laughed at his words.

And she continued, "They have been dying to cultivate with you since they returned to the sect, but they were also afraid that you might reject them because of what happened."

"I wouldn't do anything like that." He shook his head.

"I know, and I told them that, but they didn't want to listen to me." Su Liqing sighed. "Anyway, what brings you here, Su Yang?"

Chapter 604 - Do You Want to Stick It in My Butt?

"I came here to give you something," Su Yang said, and he retrieved a scroll from his storage ring before placing it before Su Liqing.

"This is... a cultivation technique?" Su Liqing raised her eyebrows at the scroll on the table.

"This is a cultivation technique that means a lot to me, and I want you to have it. However, whether you want to cultivate it or not will be entirely up to you."

"What do you mean by that? Why would you give me something you don't want me to cultivate?" she only felt even more confused.

"To tell you the truth, you are not suited for dual cultivation." Su Yang suddenly said to her, and he continued, "However, that is not to say that you have no talent in dual cultivation. In fact, you are quite talented in that regard. It's just that you are more talented with the sword."

"I'm talented with the sword...? But I have rarely held a sword in my life... And I only know the very basics..." she responded with a dazed expression.

"I know this may be very sudden to you, but as someone who's trained with a sword for a good chunk of his life, I can tell whether someone is talented with swords or not just by looking at their physique, and you, Liqing, have the perfect physique." Su Yang said to her, and he continued, "In fact, your physique is very familiar to someone that I used to know, hence why I chose that technique for you."

Su Liqing then opened the scroll and read the cultivation technique out loud, "Vanishing Sword Dance?"

Despite having never seen or heard this technique before, Su Liqing felt very familiar with it, almost as though it was already in her memories.

"Including me, there are only four individuals who have learned this technique before, and two of them are no longer in this world. This sword technique was created by my first love who was also my first wife, but after she passed away, I took this technique and refined it until I can no longer improve it." Su Yang explained the importance of the technique to Su Liqing.

"Such an important technique... I don't think I can accept it..." Su Liqing said after hearing his words.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "No matter who it once belonged to or what importance it may hold, cultivation techniques are meant to be passed down, or it will lose all of its meanings. I do not wish for this technique to disappear through the passage of time, nor do I want to give it to just anybody, so I am going to give it to you, who I care deeply enough to entrust such an important technique. Furthermore, you have the same physique as my first wife who created this technique. There's simply nobody in this world that's more fitting than you to have this technique."

"Su Yang..." Su Liqing was speechless at this moment, as she was overwhelmed by her emotions.

Sometime later, Su Liqing asked him, "If I decide to learn this technique, will you still cultivate with me?"

"Of course." Su Yang immediately nodded without even needing to think about it. "The Vanishing Sword Dance is mostly a martial technique. If you wish to improve your cultivation, you still have to cultivate normally. If you want, you can even become a dual cultivator and a swordmaster at the same time, like me."

"Thank you, Su Yang, for entrusting me with such a precious technique..." she said with a beautiful smile on her face.

"You can find me whenever you decide to start practicing the technique; I'll guide you step by step."

"I will start practicing tomorrow!" she said.

Sometime later, Su Liqing asked him, "Do you have anything else for me, Su Yang?"

"No, I don't. Do you have anything for me?" he shook his head.

"Of course. I cannot accept a gift from you without properly thanking you." Su Liqing then stood up and grabbed his hands, before pulling him towards the bed a few meters away.

"Now that we have so many new disciples, I have been so busy with work that I haven't been able to see you recently. But now that you are here, I can finally have some fun."

Su Liqing gently pushed Su Yang onto the bed before kneeling before his legs and approaching his crotch with her hands.

A few moments later, she loosened the area between his legs, allowing his dragon to soar freely.

"Mmm..."

Su Liqing shoved the entire shaft into her mouth in one go and began moving her head back and forth.

Su Yang closed his eyes and fully indulged himself in Su Liqing's soft lips and skillful tongue, allowing her to savor his big brother until she was satisfied.

Many minutes later, Su Liqing removed her lips from his shaft and stood up while loosening her own robes.

She then sat directly on his lap, shoving his thick rod into her wet cave.

"Ahhhn~!" Su Liqing moaned softly, feeling a tingly sensation coursing through her body.

She began moving her h.i.p.s shortly later, riding Su Yang's shaft elegantly.

Meanwhile, Su Yang silently stared at her beautifully shaped and soft buttocks from behind, watching them shake from the impact and feeling a strong urge to grab them.

A few moments later, Su Yang gave in to his urges and reached for Su Liqing's buttocks, firmly grabbing them with his large hands.

"Ahhhh~" Su Liqing m.o.a.ned loudly in response to his touch, and she turned around to look at him with a seductive look.

"I've noticed this for a while now, but you really like touching my butt," she said to him with a teasing smile.

"It's a flawless piece of treasure, after all. I can't help but want to touch it whenever I see it." Su Yang said without feeling any shame.

Su Liqing suddenly stopped moving her body and said to him a moment later in a somewhat hesitant voice, "Then... do you want to stick it in my butt?"

Chapter 605 - Spreading Her Buttocks Wide Open

"..."

Su Liqing silently stared at Su Yang with a somewhat dazed expression.

When she realized what she'd just said to him, her face flushed with redness.

'Oh no! I spoke too hastily just now! What if he thinks of me as some weird girl now?!' she cried inwardly, feeling the urge to jump into a hole.

"F-Forget what I said just now! I was only joking—" she said to him a moment later.

However, Su Yang interrupted her with a smile on his face, "There's no need to feel embarrassed about it. No matter which hole you want me to pleasure, I will do so to the best of my abilities. Furthermore, it's not as though I have no experience with that hole. In fact, there are plenty of people who prefer it in the back. Come, stick your butt towards my way."

Su Liqing was speechless, feeling as though she'd heard the last sentence somewhere before.

"A-Are you sure...? You won't think I'm weird?" she asked him again just in case.

"There's no way that I would think you're weird just because you want to experience something new, Liqing. I have had even weirder requests before. In fact, I think you are brave for taking it in the back, as not many women are willing to do this." Su Yang said.

Hearing his words and seeing his serious expression, Su Liqing eventually nodded her head.

She then crawled on the bed in the d.o.g.g.y position with her beautiful buttocks facing him.

Despite the arousing scene, Su Yang did not immediately stick his shaft in her butt and instead took a moment to admire the view of Su Liqing's butt and everything in-between.

After engraving this view in his mind, Su Yang approached her behind, before spreading her buttocks wide open for an even clearer view. He then poked the tiny hole that was located directly above her pink cave with his finger.

"Ahhh~" Su Liqing's body trembled at his touch.

"Since this is your first time, I will loosen the hole up a bit before putting in the real thing. This way you won't feel as much pain."

"I-It's going to be painful?" Su Liqing asked him with a nervous expression.

"It will hurt in the beginning, but once the hole starts to spread and loosen itself, you will feel only pleasure afterward."

"Okay..." Su Liqing nodded her head, entrusting her butthole to him.

"I'm going to start with one finger," said Su Yang as he gently pushed one of his fingers into her tiny hole.

"Ahhh!" Su Liqing m.o.a.ned loudly, and she could feel her butthole slowly spreading widely.

'This feeling is only one finger?!' Su Liqing was greatly shocked, as it felt like there was more than one finger currently inside her butthole.

And if a single finger already feels so big, she cannot imagine what will happen when Su Yang sticks the real thing into such a tiny hole.

'Is it even going to fit inside?' she thought to herself.

A few minutes later, once the hole was loose enough, Su Yang increased from one finger to two fingers.

"Ahhhhh~!"

The feeling of two fingers inside her butthole was vastly different than having only one, and it was a whole new level of pleasure, causing Su Liqing to climax through the front hole.

"S-Su Yang... this is..."

"Do you like it?" he asked her.

"Un..." she nodded in a bashful manner.

"Then let's loosen it up some more with just the tip..."

Su Yang removed his fingers and poked her butthole with the tip of his p.e.n.i.s.

"Heavens!" Su Liqing cried out loud from shock. "T-This is just the tip?!"

She thought her butthole was going to tear in half just now, feeling excruciating pain from it.

"Do you want to stop now?" Su Yang asked her after seeing her painful expression.

"N-No... I can handle it..." she shook her head.

"Then I will start moving now," he said to her before he slowly moved his h.i.p.s, poking her small hole with just the tip of his shaft.

"Ahhh~"

"Aaaaaah~"

"Aahn!"

Su Liqing m.o.a.ned loudly. Although it was painful at first, as her buttohole started stretching wider, the pain also lessened, and very soon, there was only pleasure coming from her buttohole.

A few minutes later, Su Liqing said to him in a pleading voice, "You can insert the whole thing inside now, Su Yang."

Hearing her words, Su Yang responded by pushing his shaft deeper into her narrow hole— until his entire rod inside her tunnel, feeling his shaft being tightly squeezed by her insides.

"Is...Is it all inside yet?" Su Liqing asked him a moment later.

"Yes, it is. How do you feel?"

"Painful... but it's endurable," she responded in a low voice.

And she continued, "You can start moving. I can endure it."

Su Yang nodded and began moving his h.i.p.s shortly later.

"Ahhh!"

Su Liqing bit down on her lips from the pain of her buttohole being pierced by a massive shaft that was many times larger than the hole itself.

Meanwhile, Su Yang felt as though he'd just entered heaven from the squeezing feeling from her narrow tunnel and her soft buttocks that pressed against his pelvic area every time he thrusts his h.i.p.s, not to mention the strong sucking sensation that kept pulling his shaft deeper into her hole.

"Ahhhh! Ahhhhh! Ahhhhh!" Su Liqing m.o.a.ned without restraint, her expression and voice filled with pleasure and l.u.s.t.

And every time Su Yang moved his h.i.p.s, her front cave would drool with Yin Qi, before leaking down her thighs.

A few moments later, Su Liqing screamed with a look of ecstasy on her l.u.s.tful face, "I'm c.u.m.m.i.n.g! I'm c.u.m.m.i.n.g, Su Yang!"

Her body suddenly trembled violently, and her front cave gushed with Yin Qi, soaking the bed.

"Haaa... haaa..." Su Liqing collapsed on the bed afterward with heavy panting.

"Keep going, Su Yang... I want you to ravage my butt even more!" she said to him after catching her breath.

Su Yang nodded, and he continued smashing her butt with his shaft drilling deeper into her tunnel.

Chapter 606 - Yang Qi in Both Holes

An entire hour has passed since Su Liqing received her first experience in the butt with Su Yang.

"Do you want to feel even better than this?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

"What are you going to do?" she looked at him with a l.u.s.tful gaze.

Su Yang then tapped the storage on his finger and retrieved a bottle of an unknown substance.

"T-That's..." Su Liqing's eyes widened at this familiar-looking substance.

"So do you want to?"

Su Liqing immediately nodded her head with her eyes filled with desire.

Su Yang then opened the bottle of Euphoric Oil and poured it directly between her buttocks, letting it flow like a river, before soaking his shaft and her butthole with the Euphoric Oil.

"Oh!"

Su Liqing could immediately feel the effects of the Euphoric Oil with her butthole flaring up with passion, and she began moving her body back and forth.

"Ahhhh!"

"Ahhhn!"

"Ahh~!"

Due to the slippery nature of the Euphoric Oil, it made it much easier for Su Yang to move his shaft inside Su Liqing's butthole, allowing her to feel even more pleasure.

And with the Euphoric Oil stimulating her senses of pleasure even further, Su Liqing felt as though she was in heaven at this moment.

"Aaaah~!"

Hearing Su Liqing's enticing m.o.a.n.s, Su Yang suddenly grabbed her buttocks with firmness and began pounding her hole even more fiercely.

A few minutes later, Su Yang picked up the Euphoric Oil again and poured the rest of the oil on her back, before rubbing it all over her body.

"Harder! Ravage my butt more, Su Yang!" Su Liqing felt as though her entire body was on fire, almost as if every cell in her body was stimulated with pleasure.

After pounding her body for some more, Su Yang suddenly reached for her b.r.e.a.s.ts from behind and embraced her body.

"Kiss me, Su Yang..." Su Liqing said to him while turning her head around so he can reach her lips.

"Mmmm!"

Su Yang began kissing her with his lower body still moving constantly.

"I love you, Su Yang..." she said to him afterward.

"I love you too, Liqing..." he also said to her as he increased the speed of his hip movements.

Sometime later, when Su Liqing was reaching her limits, Su Yang released his Yang Qi directly inside her butt.

"Ahhhh~!"

Su Liqing suddenly felt a hot stream of liquid shooting up her buttocks; it was a weird yet wonderful feeling.

Once Su Yang stopped shooting his Yang Qi into her a few moments later, he slowly unplugged his shaft from her buttocks, leaving behind a gaping hole in her butt that was as wide as his shaft with white liquid oozing out.

The hole quickly began closing itself a second later, but because it'd been stretched to its limit by Su Yang's thick shaft for a long time, it did not return to its regular-sized hole until many minutes later.

"We should do this again in the future. And we should use the Euphoric Oil from the beginning the next time we do this..." Su Liqing said to him after catching her breath.

"Of course." Su Yang nodded.

"Anyway... what about this hole, Su Yang?" Su Liqing suddenly pointed at her v.a.g.i.n.a and said to him.

"Although my buttocks is satisfied, this hole is still craving for your love..."

Su Yang chuckled at her enthusiasm, and he said to her, "Don't push yourself too hard."

"I'm not," she quickly said.

"Okay, but let's take a short break before we continue."

"Un." She nodded.

"Can you hug me tightly?" Su Liqing suddenly asked him.

Hearing her request, Su Yang wasted no time wrapping his arm around her body and pulling her into his embrace.

"I cannot imagine a life without you anymore, Su Yang..." she said to him in a low voice.

"You won't have to because I will always be by your side..." he said while caressing her silky long hair.

Sometime later, once Su Liqing recovered some of her energy back, Su Yang asked her, "Are you ready for more?"

Su Liqing did not immediately respond and merely grabbed his hands and placed it between her legs.

"What do you think?" she whispered in his ear in an e.r.o.t.i.c voice.

After feeling a soft and wet sensation on his hand, Su Yang stood up with a smile on his face.

Seeing this, Su Liqing laid her on the bed with her legs spread wide open, allowing Su Yang easy access to her paradise.

However, Su Yang did not immediately penetrate her cave and proceeded to tease her petals with his mouth instead.

"Ahhh~"

Su Liqing m.o.a.ned softly as Su Yang licked her slit clean.

"Stop teasing me and put it inside already, Su Yang..." Su Liqing pleaded in a cute voice when she could no longer control her urges.

After licking her little sister for a few more moments, Su Yang finally lifted his head and stood up with his dragon mighty stiff.

He then approached her cave with his shaft, before shoving the whole thing inside in a single movement.

"Ahhhhh~!"

Su Liqing m.o.a.ned loudly with a look of ecstasy on her beautiful face, and her eyes uncontrollably rolled back with her tongue sticking out in a vulgar manner.

Seeing her s.e.xy face, Su Yang began thrusting his shaft into her body even faster, and he continued to smash her meat for another two hours before he finally released his Yang Qi into her cave.

"Now both of my holes are filled with your Yang Qi, Su Yang..." Su Liqing said to him with a warm smile afterward.

"If you say something like that, I will want to do it even more." Su Yang laughed.

"If it makes you happy, I will gladly endure it until you are satisfied," she then said.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I will never harm your body for my own satisfaction even if you are okay with it."

"Furthermore, your disciples are still waiting for me to finish here."

"Then you shouldn't make them wait so long. Go ahead and make those girls happy. I will take care of everything here."

"I will come to see you again in a few days," Su Yang said to her before leaving the room some minutes later.

Chapter 607 - Morning Wood Pagoda

After leaving Su Liqing's room, Su Yang walked back down the stairs, and when he reached the first floor, all of the disciples there immediately stopped whatever they were doing to stare at him.

Seeing this, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "I have spoken to your Master about it. She told me to make you girls happy, so if you want to cultivate, follow me."

"I want to cultivate with you, Sect Master!"

"Me, too!"

A few minutes later, the disciples in the Medicine Hall lined up behind Su Yang and waited for him to lead them.

However, Su Yang remained standing there, almost as though he was waiting for someone.

The disciples behind him turned around, and they noticed Disciple Xiao standing in the corner alone with a hesitant expression on her face.

"What's the matter, Sister Xiao? Are you going to cultivate with the Sect Master or not?" One of the disciples asked her.

"..."

Disciple Xiao did not respond to her question.

"Did you forget? Sister Xiao was the only one who did not receive the Sect Master's massage back then, and she has also disliked him." Another disciple suddenly reminded her.

"Oh, right... Sorry for bothering you, Sister Xiao..."

The disciples quickly gave up on trying to convince Disciple Xiao, as she has always reacted the opposite of everyone there when it comes to Su Yang.

However, Su Yang did not want her to feel left out, so he asked her, "Do you want to come?"

"...Can I really come?" Disciple Xiao unexpectedly responded in a low voice, and she continued, "Don't you hate me? I was the only one among the group to refuse your massage on that day, and I have always looked down on you ever since then. Unlike my fellow sisters who have supported you since the very beginning, I do not deserve to cultivate with you."

"..."

The other disciples there looked at Disciple Xiao with speechless expressions.

However, Su Yang said, "If you think I am that petty of a person to hate a woman just because she rejected me once or twice then you are truly looking down on me. You can reject me a million times and even curse at me every day, but I won't hate you for it."

"Really...?" Disciple Xiao looked at him with a doubtful gaze. However, unlike before, she could look at his face without feeling any disgust.

"If you don't believe my words, I can prove it to you during our cultivation." Su Yang said.

After taking a moment to ponder, Disciple Xiao finally nodded her head, and she stood beside her fellow sister shortly later.

"Let's go somewhere more spacious." Now that everyone in the Medicine Hall had agreed to cultivate with him, Su Yang left the building with ten beauties following behind him, and it was almost as though he was reenacting the scene of their first meeting.

"Sect Master, doesn't this feel incredibly nostalgic? When you were still an Outer Court disciple, we also followed you back home like this." One of the disciples suddenly said out loud.

"Of course, I remember it. And you don't have to call me Sect Master. Just call me Su Yang like you used to." He said to them.

"Then can I ask you something, Su Yang?" Another disciple said.

"What is it?"

"When did you and our Master enter that kind of relationship?"

"It began the day before I met you girls, but we didn't actually start cultivating until a week later," he answered without hesitation.

"What?! You and our Master were already in a relationship that early on?! And to think I thought it was after you became an Inner Court disciple!" The disciples expressed profound shock after learning that Su Yang had been in an intimate relationship with their Master ever since he was only an Outer Court disciple.

"Unbelievable... To think the strict Elder Lan would break the Sect Rules and cultivate with an Outer Court disciple..."

Sometime later, Su Yang stopped in front of the Morning Wood Pagoda.

"Hm? The Morning Wood Pagoda? What are we doing here?" The disciples looked at him with a puzzled face.

"What? We're going to cultivate here, of course." He said to them with a calm expression.

"What?! We're going to cultivate here?!" The disciples repeated his words but in a shocked voice.

"B-But isn't this where the Sect Elders have their meetings...? Are you sure that we can cultivate here?" One of the disciples asked him.

"They used to have meetings here, but it's just another building that's not being used now." Su Yang said, and he continued, "What's there to be worried about? I am the Sect Master. If I say that we can cultivate here, then who can stop us? Unlike my small room before, there's plenty of space here. It's the perfect location for us to cultivate without feeling cramped."

"..."

The disciples looked at him with disbelief. To think he'd use his status as the Sect Master to do something like this. It was simply too ridiculous.

"Let's go inside." Su Yang said as he began walking the steps.

The disciples looked at each other for a few seconds before following him.

Once they were inside the building, Su Yang continued to climb the stairs until they were all the way on the highest floor— the fourth floor.

Although the fourth floor was not as spacious as the previous three floors, it was much cleaner and even had nice window views in all four directions.

"Where are the beds, Su Yang? Don't tell me we're going to cultivate on this hard surface?"

Hearing the disciple's concern, Su Yang tapped his storage ring and pulled out four identical mattresses and laid them on the floor together, creating a massive bed out of thin air.

"..."

Once again, the disciples found themselves speechless by Su Yang's unorthodox methods.

Sometime later, one of the disciples asked him, "Who do you want to cultivate with first, Su Yang? Or should we go in the same order as before?"

Chapter 608 - Pleasuring Six At Once

"There's no need to go one at a time because I can satisfy three of you at once." Su Yang said to them with a confident smile.

"Three of us at a time...?" The disciples exchanged dazed looks with each other.

Sometime later, after the disciples decided who would go first, three of them approached Su Yang, who was calmly standing on the bed he made.

"Please take care of us, Su Yang..."

The disciples bowed to him with respect before they loosened their robes.

Su Yang nodded and also removed his clothes, showing them his perfect body and the mighty beast between his legs.

"Oh my..."Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click /book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/pleasuring-six-at-once_50292955260447530 for visiting.

The disciples gasped with their hands covering their mouths from shock, as they have never seen such a beastly yet beautiful sword before.

"As expected of you, Su Yang. Not only are your hands big but even your little brother is quite enormous..."

The three disciples couldn't wait to touch Su Yang's rod, and they approached him with hungry expressions.

Meanwhile, the other seven disciples watched them in the background with their mouths wet with saliva and their eyes wide open.

A few moments later, all three disciples began licking Su Yang's thick shaft simultaneously.

"Slow down, it won't go anywhere." Su Yang chuckled after seeing their hasty movements, and he stood still with his hands clasped behind his back, looking like a hero on the battlefield. However, instead of facing warriors, he had three beautiful young ladies fighting for the sword between his legs.

Many minutes later, once all three disciples had a chance to suck on his shaft, Su Yang said to them, "Line up beside each other and get on all four."

The disciples nodded their heads before kneeling on the bed in the d.o.g.g.y position beside each other, looking like three dogs getting ready for a walk.

Su Yang then walked behind the disciple in the middle, and since her lower cave was already soaking wet, he did not bother with the foreplay and directly shoved his thick shaft into her hole.

"Ahhhh!"

The disciple m.o.a.ned loudly when she felt his massive divine rod spreading her cave to its limits.

"What about us, Su Yang?" The two disciples beside her asked him with a l.u.s.tful expression.

"Don't worry, it'll be your turn later. For now, I'll satisfy you with my hands," said Su Yang as he reached for their flowers with his free hands.

"Aaah~!"

"Aaaahhn!"

Now that he was fully occupied, Su Yang began moving his h.i.p.s and hands simultaneously, pleasuring all three disciples before him at once.

"Aaah~!"

"Mmmm~!"

"Aaaahn~!"

The three disciples m.o.a.ned together as Su Yang satisfied their holes.

A few minutes later, Su Yang released his liquid into the disciple in the middle, filling her stomach with hot Yang Qi.

Once the disciple in the middle had her filling, Su Yang shoved his shaft into another disciple, and he continued to satisfy the other two with his hands.

Su Yang proceeded to satisfy the three disciples in this manner until they were completely exhausted and satisfied.

"That was amazing, Su Yang..."

"It's on another level compared to your massages..."

"I would be willing to pay even 1,000 premium points if you'd offered this kind of service before..."

Sometime later, Su Yang turned to look at the other seven disciples and said to them, "Which of you want to go next?"

Immediately, six of them stood up at the same time with only Disciple Xiao being the only one who didn't stand up.

"Hahaha... that's fine. I will satisfy all of you at once." Su Yang laughed.

And without hesitation, the six sisters removed their clothes and tossed them to the side before rushing onto the bed.

Su Yang then laid his back on the bed and said, "I can satisfy one person with each of my limbs, one person with my mouth, and one more with my sword."

"You can even satisfy people with your feet?" The girls looked at him with wide eyes.

"See for yourself what I can do with my feet," he said with a confident expression.

Sometime later, Su Yang began pleasuring the six girls simultaneously with his entire body. There were two girls being pleased by his hands, another two by his feet, one by his tongue, and the last one by his shaft. It was an absurd scene that shocked Disciple Xiao to her core, as she has never seen anything this ridiculous before.

"Ahhh~!"

"Aaaah!"

"Aaahn~"

"Oooh~!"

The room was filled with the m.o.a.ning of six disciples, sounding as though there was a group of birds singing together.

Two hours later, when all six disciples laid on the bed with exhausted looks and gasping for air, Su Yang looked at Disciple Xiao, who had been silently watching this entire time.

"You're the only one left." He said to her.

Disciple Xiao nodded, and she began making her way to him with small and slow steps.

Once she was beside the bed, she loosened her robes, revealing her small and slender body to him.

Su Yang then grabbed her hand and pulled her into his embrace.

"Thank you, Su Yang, for accepting me..." she said to him in a low voice.

"I should be thanking you for finally trusting me..." he said.

"Please take care of me..."

"I will... but since you never got the chance to experience my massage, why don't we start with that first?"

"Okay," she nodded with anticipation.

Disciple Xiao laid on the bed with her back facing the ceiling.

A few moments later, Su Yang began rubbing her back with his hands.

"Aaah~!" Disciple Xiao quickly m.o.a.ned. The massage had barely begun and she was already shocked speechless by how amazing it felt.

'I can't believe I had refused something as amazing as this! No wonder why the others are always all over him! I am such a fool!' she cried inwardly as Su Yang continued to arouse her body with his skillful techniques.

Chapter 609 - Did You Girls Have Fun?

"Mmmm..."

"Aaaahn~"

Disciple Xiao completely indulged herself in the sensation of pleasure as Su Yang rubbed all over her body with his large hands. Her lower cave oozed with Yin Qi, and her body trembled constantly.

When Su Yang reached her legs, he kneaded her soft thighs as though they were dough, and he would often 'accidentally' brush against the entrance of her cave with the tip of his fingers, causing even more Yin Qi to leak from her cave.

"Aaaah~!"

Disciple Xiao's m.o.a.ning was so passionate that it'd aroused the disciples that were still exhausted from their session with Su Yang.

"Please... stick it inside my p.u.s.s.y, Su Yang... I can't endure this burning sensation any longer... I'll go crazy!" Disciple Xiao begged him in a desperate voice.

Su Yang nodded, and after Disciple Xiao flipped her body, he rubbed his enormous shaft on her slit before piercing her tight cave.

"Ahhhh~!"

Feeling her inner walls being torn apart by Su Yang's massive shaft, Disciple Xiao m.o.a.ned loudly.

Meanwhile, Su Yang continuously plunged his rod into her hole, sending shocking sensations across her entire body.

"Ahhh!"

"Aaaah!"

"Aaaaaaaah~!"

The other disciples watched as Su Yang intensely pounded their Junior sister Xiao for many minutes without any breaks, their eyes wide with surprise, as they didn't expect her to endure his techniques for so long.

"Wow... Junior sister Xiao is actually more impressive than us..."

"What a surprise..."

"To think she'd been hiding her talent all along..."

After another ten minutes of intense cultivation, when Disciple Xiao could no longer endure the pleasure, Su Yang released enough Yang Qi to fill a small bucket into her cave. Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click /book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/did-you-girls-have-fun_50297281114599423 for visiting.

"Aaaaahn~! It's so hot~!" Disciple Xiao moaned loudly, feeling as though her inner walls were on fire.

Su Yang then removed his shaft from her hole, allowing the Yang Qi inside her cave to leak down her slit like a small river.

And just as the disciples thought that they were done, they noticed the dragon between his legs that was still as stiff as a rock.

"Su Yang... just how much stamina do you have? You just cultivated with ten of us without taking a single break, yet you are still as energetic as when we first started!" They said to him with awe in their voice.

"Of course, I would be energetic. I am surrounded by so many beauties, after all."

The disciples exchanged dazed gazes with each other before laughing at his words together.

"If you say something like that, we will have no choice but to keep you accompanied for a little bit longer, right, fellow sisters?"

"That's right, Su Yang. But will you be able to handle another round with us?"

Su Yang laughed at their words and said, "Only one round? You girls are underestimating me too much. I can handle even ten rounds with you girls and not break a sweat."

"Ten rounds? Now you are talking, Su Yang."

"Then what are we waiting for? Let's start our second round!"

The disciples quickly surrounded him, and Su Yang began cultivating with them again.

One hour... two hours... three hours...

After another three hours of intense cultivation, eight out of the ten disciples were knocked unconscious from experiencing too much pleasure.

"Four rounds, huh? Not even half of the goal." Su Yang smiled afterward.

"Your stamina is simply too monstrous, Su Yang... I feel like you won't be satisfied even if there's one hundred of us," said Disciple Xiao.

"I won't deny that..." he chuckled.

Sometime later, he said to her, "I'm going to leave first. If you girls ever want to cultivate again, you know where to find me."

"Thank you again, Su Yang, for today." Disciple Xiao bowed to him.

"Don't even mention it."

Two hours later, the disciples began waking up.

"Hmm? When did I fall asleep?"

"Where did Su Yang go?"

"Don't tell me it was all a dream?!"

The disciples began panicking when they woke up without Su Yang by their side, wondering if they were only dreaming just now.

"Calm down, fellow sisters. Su Yang left early since you girls were completely knocked out in the middle of our cultivation." Disciple Xiao said to them.

"Oh... so we weren't dreaming..."

"I can't believe we actually got to cultivate with Su Yang despite what happened! I feel blessed!"

"I had given up all hope when we left the sect, but alas, thank the heavens that Su Yang is who he is."

"I cannot agree more, Sister Jia."

"Anyway, let's clean up and return to the Medicine Hall. I think we've been gone for too long."

Sometime later, when the disciples returned to the Medicine Hall, Su Liqing was already downstairs and ready to greet them.

"Master! We apologize for disappearing for so long!"

"Su Yang was much more energetic than we could've ever imagined..."

The disciples apologized to her.

However, Su Liqing shook her head and asked them with a smile on her face, "I only care about one thing right now, and that is... whether you girls had fun or not."

"W-We had fun, Master!" They quickly nodded their heads.

"Then were you satisfied with the experience?"

"Very!" They nodded again.

"Then I will forgive you for returning so late." Su Liqing said, and she continued, "Anyway, I will finish everyone's work today by myself. You can all go home and rest some more."

"R-Really? You don't have to do that much for us, Master..."

Su Liqing then asked them, "Look at yourselves. How can you work when you cannot even stand still without shaking? If I say that I will handle it, then I will do so."

"T-Thank you, Master! We will work twice as hard when we return tomorrow!" They bowed to her.

"Of course you will." Su Liqing said.

Once the disciples left the Medicine Hall again, Su Liqing sat down with an exhausted look on her face.

"I guess I will have to close the Medicine Hall early today. I won't be able to concentrate on work with my butt in such a condition anyway..." she sighed.

Chapter 610 - The Fang Sisters

After leaving the Medicine Hall, Su Yang walked back to the Yin Yang Pavilion, passing the Training Grounds on the way there.

There were at least a dozen disciples from the Cultivation Division currently practicing their techniques in the Training Grounds, and near the edge of this place was a beautiful young lady silently practicing by herself.

"Haaa!"

Fang Xiaoru punched the empty space before her, creating a powerful shock wave that shook the air. However, because it was such a powerful shock wave, it distracted the other disciples in the Training Ground despite being on the other side of the place.

"Senior apprentice-sister Fang is truly on another level," sighed one of the disciples there.

"What did you expect from someone who belongs to one of the four great families?"

"It's very distracting with her here. I cannot practice properly when there's an earthquake occurring every three seconds..."

"But it's not as though we can tell her to stop practicing..."

A few moments later, they noticed Su Yang's figure approaching them in the distance.

"Disciple greets the Sect Master!" The disciples there immediately stopped their training to greet him.

"Don't mind me. Continue your training." Su Yang said to them.

"Yes, Sect Master!"

The disciples then continued their training, but their eyes remained on Su Yang's figure, as they were curious about his intentions for coming here.

"Su Yang..." Fang Xiaoru also stopped training after seeing his approaching figure.

"I see that you have improved significantly since I gave you the full technique," he said to her with a smile.

"Yes! I have been training nonstop with the technique ever since then!" she nodded with a proud expression.

"Let me see how much you have truly progressed. Hit me with everything you've got like the last time," he suddenly said to her.

Fang Xiaoru nodded and turned to face him with a serious expression. Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click /book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/the-fang-sisters_50317225600542459 for visiting.

"Haaa!"

After a moment of silence, Fang Xiaoru extended her palm towards Su Yang with all of her strength behind it.

Boom!

Su Yang raised his hand to block it, but unlike previously, Fang Xiaoru had managed to push him back slightly with the technique.

"Not bad." He nodded afterward, feeling a slight numbing sensation on his hands.

"Well, if you need any advice, you know where to find me. And let me create a formation for you so that you won't distract the other disciples." Su Yang said before creating a large formation beside her.

"The formation will absorb all of your blows. This way you can use all of your strength without worrying about bothering the others."

"Thank you, Su Yang!" she quickly bowed to him.

"Anyway, you can continue practicing for now."

"W-Wait a second!" she suddenly stopped him.

"What else do you need?"

"Um..." Fang Xiaoru showed a bashful expression before speaking in a low voice, "Do you think I can... cultivate with you again?"

Su Yang immediately smiled and said, "Of course. When do you want to do it?"

"Are you available now...?" she asked him.

"Certainly." He nodded.

"Then let's head to my living quarters..."

Fang Xiaoru said as she began walking away.

Sometime later, when they reached Fang Xiaoru's house, a familiar voice resounded not very far in the distance.

"Xiaoru and Su Yang?" Fang Zhelan, who was just returning from walking Xiao Bai, called out to them after seeing them together.

"Elder Sister..." Fang Xiaoru's face reddened even further after seeing her face.

"It's been a while Xiao Bai," Su Yang said after seeing the massive white ball of bluff standing beside Fang Zhelan.

"Roooooar!"

Xiao Bai released a low roar before running to Su Yang and covering his face with her saliva.

"What are you two doing together?" Fang Zhelan approached them and asked.

"Well..." Fang Xiaoru immediately flustered at her questioning.

However, Su Yang responded with a calm expression, "We're going to cultivate."

"Oh..." Fang Zhelan mumbled with a slightly dazed face.

"Do you want to join us?" Su Yang suddenly asked her in a teasing voice, dumbfounding the sisters.

"Uh..." Fang Zhenlan turned to look at her little sister, as she didn't want to intrude on their time together.

"I'm only joking with you. If you want to cultivate with me, I can do it afterward." Su Yang then said.

However, Fang Xiaoru's voice resounded immediately afterward: "I don't mind..."

"Eh?" Fang Zhelan looked at her with wide eyes filled with surprise.

"I said I don't mind having you join us, Elder Sister..." she quickly repeated.

"A-Are you sure...?" Fang Zhelan asked her with a worried frown. Although she doesn't mind sharing Su Yang during cultivation as she has done it before already, the person she would be sharing him with this time is her own sister!

"Do you mind, Su Yang?" Fang Xiaoru asked him.

"Why would I? Although it was only a joke at first, I was the one who suggested it." He said.

"You heard him, Elder Sister. I also don't mind." Fang Xiaoru said to her afterward.

Fang Zhelan nodded, and then she said, "Let me bring Xiao Bai back home first. You can start without me."

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan returned to Fang Xiaoru's house, and by the time she returned, Fang Xiaoru already had her warmup with Su Yang.

"You're finally here, Elder Sister..." Fang Xiaoru said to her with a lustful expression on her beautiful face as she laid on the bed with her naked body twitching. There was even a little Yin Qi that could still be seen squirting from her lower lips.

"..." Fang Zhelan was rendered speechless after seeing Fang Xiaoru's vulgar expression for the first time in her life.

A few moments later, once Fang Zhelan snapped out of her daze, she removed her clothes and got onto the bed with Su Yang and Fang Xiaoru.

"Let's get your body ready, too." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

Fang Zhelan nodded, and she approached him the next moment before giving him a passionate kiss on the lips.

Chapter 611 - The Sisters' Teamwork

"Mmm..."

"Aaahn~"

Fang Zhelan m.o.a.n.ed softly as Su Yang nibbled on her b.r.e.a.s.ts and teased her lower lips with his hands at the same time.

"I'm c.u.m.m.i.n.g, Su Yang!" Fang Zhelan cried out loud before her body trembled and her cave gushed with Yin Qi, soaking his hands with her love juice.

"Let me pleasure you now..." Fang Zhelan wasted no time reaching for Su Yang's stiff shaft afterward.

"Mmm..."

"Mmmmm..."

Fang Zhelan sucked on his rod like an expert, filling the room with e.r.o.t.i.c noises.

"..."

A few moments later, when Fang Zhelan noticed that Fang Xiaoru was staring at her with an envious gaze, Fang Zhelan said, "Let's pleasure him together."

Fang Xiaoru immediately nodded her head, and she began licking Su Yang's shaft together with Fang Zhelan, before taking turns putting it inside their mouth.

"Mmm..."

"Mmmmm..."

While Fang Xiaoru sucked on Su Yang's shaft to the best of her abilities, Fang Zhelan worked on his treasured jewels underneath with her mouth and hands, making Su Yang feel as though he'd entered heaven.

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan said, "Let me kiss you with this mouth, too..."

She then began rubbing her lower lips up and down his stiff shaft, feeling as though she was grinding against a metal rod.

"Me too..."

Fang Xiaoru followed Fang Zhelan's position and movements and also began rubbing Su Yang's shaft with her lower lips.

At this moment, Su Yang's shaft was being sandwiched by the Fang Sister with their lower lips kissing his rod simultaneously.

A few moments later, the Fang Sisters could feel Su Yang's shaft quickly heating up, before it suddenly exploded with his Yang Qi shooting high into the air and raining down on the sisters, almost like a volcano's eruption.

"It's so hot..." Fang Xiaoru said, feeling as though she just took a shower in hot Yang Qi.

"Let me clean it up for you, Xiaoru..." Fang Zhelan suddenly approached her and began licking the Yang Qi sticking onto her body, instantly dumbfounding her.

Once Fang Xiaoru was clean, Fang Zhelan began licking herself. However, Fang Xiaoru quickly said to her, "Since you helped me, allow me to also help you, Elder Sister..."

Thus, Fang Xiaoru began licking the Yang Qi off Fang Zhelan's body.

Of course, Su Yang silently watched them lick each other with an entertained smile on his face.

When the Fang Sisters were finished cleaning each other, Fang Zhelan said, "Who do you want to cultivate with first, Su Yang?"

"I will cultivate with both of you at the same time," he said, baffling them.

"How... How are you going to do that?" Fang Xiaoru asked him.

"It's simple... the two of you will embrace each other from the front and make a sandwich, and I will insert my thing right between your flowers." Su Yang explained it to them.

"As expected of you, Su Yang... I am always learning new things from you..." Fang Zhelan said with a smile on her face.

She then looked at Fang Xiaoru and said to her, "Since you have a smaller body, I will be on the bottom." Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click /book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/the-sisters'-teamwork_50321262332931095 for visiting.

Fang Xiaoru nodded and proceeded to lay her chest on top of Fang Zhelan's chest, essentially giving her a hug.

'This is actually more embarrassing than I'd imagined...' Fang Zhelan thought to herself with a slightly red face. Not even in her wildest dream would she imagine herself hugging her little sister while they were both n.a.k.e.d.

Once the Fang Sisters were in position with their bottom lips kissing each other, Su Yang approached them and inserted his thick sausage directly between their lower lips, creating a sandwich with the Fang Sisters' lips.

"Aaaahn~!"

"Aaah!"

The Fang Sisters m.o.a.n.ed simultaneously as Su Yang's shaft rubbed against their flower and their pink pearl, and despite no real penetration, they still felt as though they were being f.u.c.k.i.e.d by him.

A few minutes later, Su Yang suddenly inserted his thick shaft into Fang Zhelan's cave, before releasing his sauce into her narrow hole.

"Ahhhhh~!" Fang Zhelan did not expect the sudden penetration and filling and m.o.a.ned loudly.

However, Su Yang did not empty all of his Yang Qi into Fang Zhelan and quickly switched to Fang Xiaoru's hole midway before he continued releasing his Yang Qi.

"Aaahn~!"

Fang Xiaoru also m.o.a.ned loudly as she felt her hole being filled up quickly.

After he finished emptying his load into Fang Xiaoru, Su Yang unplugged his shaft from her hole. His Yang Qi then flows out from her hole and onto Fang Zhelan's lower lips, creating a waterfall made of Yang Qi.

"That was amazing..." Fang Xiaoru said as she laid on Fang Zhelan's chest with a blissful face.

"You can't fall asleep yet, Xiaoru. We've only just begun." Fang Zhelan said to her with a smile.

"We can continue while she rests for a bit." Su Yang said to her.

Fang Zhelan nodded and laid Fang Xiaoru near the end of the bed so she could move more freely.

And while Fang Xiaoru recovers her stamina, Su Yang and Fang Zhelan begin their second round of cultivation.

"Aaaahn~!"

"Mmmm..."

"Oooh~"

Fang Zhelan m.o.a.ned in a s.e.xy voice as Su Yang pounded her flower with his meat.

Meanwhile, Fang Xiaoru watched their cultivation with an intense gaze.

'The way Elder Sister moves her body feels so natural. It's so much better than my stiff movements.' She sighed inwardly after realizing the difference in their movements and abilities.

"Aaah~!"

"Aaaaaaah!"

Fang Zhelan continued to cultivate with Su Yang for many minutes, and by the time Fang Xiaoru recovered enough stamina to continue, it was time for Fang Zhelan to rest, allowing Fang Xiaoru to take her place.

"Mmmm!"

"Aaahn~!"

"Aaah~!"

Su Yang proceeded to cultivate with the Fang Sisters, alternating between Fang Zhelan and Fang Xiaoru every ten minutes, and they would continue with this rotation until both of the sisters could no longer move from exhaustion.

At the end of their cultivation, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Fang Zhelan twenty-one times, whilst Fang Xiaoru could only handle eleven rounds before falling unconscious.

Chapter 612 - Su Yang's Plans

"Thank you for today, Su Yang. I feel like I've gotten even closer to my sister because of our cultivation." Fang Zhelan said to him afterward.

"Don't even mention it. And if you ever feel like cultivating together again, just let me know." He said with a smile.

Sometime later, Su Yang left the place and returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"Hmm... Elder Sister? Where's Su Yang?" Fang Xiaoru woke up minutes after Su Yang left.

"He already left." She said.

"I see..." Fang Xiaoru nodded.

"..."

The atmosphere quickly became awkwardly silent for the next few moments with neither of them knowing what to say in this situation.

"Umm... Elder Sister..." Fang Xiaoru suddenly broke the silence and looked at her with a serious expression.

"Can you... teach me more about dual cultivation? I want to be able to pleasure Su Yang with my body just like you, Elder Sister."

"..."

Although she was dazed at first, Fang Zhelan eventually nodded her head and said with a gentle smile on her face, "What would you like to know? I will teach you everything I know."

Fang Xiaoru's face immediately brightened, and she said, "I want to learn how to move my body elegantly just like you, Elder Sister! I also want to improve my endurance so that I can last longer during our sessions!"

"You will naturally improve your endurance and stamina as you cultivate more with Su Yang. There are other methods to improve your endurance, but I believe that cultivating with Su Yang is the most effective method because of how intense his techniques are." Fang Zhelan explained to her.

"As for my movement techniques... While I have never taught anyone before, I will try my best to teach it to you."

"Thank you, Elder Sister!" Fang Xiaoru nodded with enthusiasm. Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click <a href="/book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/su-

yang's-plans_50343416311103967">/book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/su-yang's-plans_50343416311103967 for visiting.

"Let's do our best to please Su Yang next time too," said Fang Zhelan with a smile on her face.

Meanwhile, after returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion, Tang Lingxi said to him, "How many girls did you cultivate with today? 10? 20? 30? 100?"

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "I have long discarded the habit of counting each and every single one of my cultivations."

"Regardless, you sure are living the life right now, darling."

"What do you mean?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows at her words.

"Think about it. You are currently living every single day free of worries, simply cultivating with young and pretty girls to your heart's content. If you wanted to, you can pretty much cultivate with anybody you want in this world without worrying about offending any Immortal or God. And even if you did offend someone, you can simply take care of them with your own strength, as you are an existence that cannot be restricted by this world's standard."

"However, in the Divine Heavens, it is the complete opposite, as you have enemies in almost every city and island that exists, and some of them are so powerful that even you cannot deal with them without some assistance."

"Have you ever thought about staying in this world and starting a new family— a new life here?" Tang Lingxi asked him with a serious face.

"Has it ever crossed my mind? Of course. However, I cannot simply abandon all of my responsibilities there to enjoy a new life by myself. Even if it may be dangerous and a single wrong step could end my life, I must return to the Divine Heavens and make everything right."

"I cannot abandon you— or anybody for that matter— even at the cost of my own life." He said.

"...What do you plan on doing after you return? Surely, you must have something in mind." Tang Lingxi then asked him.

"I am going to settle down," he calmly responded a moment later.

"Excuse me?" Tang Lingxi raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

Su Yang then walked to the window and stared at the Profound Blossom Sect with a profound gaze and atmosphere around him.

"After experiencing this carefree life, I think I have finally found what I really want in my life." He said sometime later.

"My life lost its meaning the same moment I lost my first wife. I didn't know what to do after her death, so I wandered the world aimlessly, hoping to find something that could fill the void in my heart."

"One thing led to another, and I learned the existence of dual cultivation. Although it did not fully restore my feelings, it was enough to temporarily fill the hole in my heart, and I continued to hone my

dual cultivation skills from that point forth regardless of the trouble I may encounter by doing so. Eventually, just like I'd with the sword, I reached the pinnacle of dual cultivation, and I'd made countless enemies and companions in the process."

"In my previous life, it was constant drama and action, and I never really got the chance to truly settle in one place and relax with my companions, and even when I did, it was only for a short period. However, after being reincarnated into this world and living a relatively carefree life, I have learned something, or should I say I have gained something new?"

After a moment of silence, Su Yang continued to speak.

"I... I want a home where I can spend the rest of my life with everyone I love. I want to create a real family in that place— a paradise that's free of worries and drama. However, in order to do something like that, I must get rid of any threat that might hinder or prevent my dreams."

Su Yang then turned to look at Tang Lingxi and said in a cold voice, "Therefore, I am going to get rid of my problems once and for all. I have been running away for far too long. The Ten Families... the Four Supreme Clan... the Heavenly Emperor... It does not matter who they are. If they are going to threaten my plan, I will erase them all."

"However, in order to do that, I will need help—your help."

"A paradise where the others and I can spend every day with you, huh?" A wide smile appeared on Tang Lingxi's face, and she approached him with a narrowed gaze.

"What do you need me— the Asura God Clan to do?" she asked him a moment later.

"I will let you know when the time comes," he said, and he continued, "My priority right now is to return to the Divine Heavens safely. Once I return, I will start the preparations."

Hearing his words, Tang Lingxi nodded.

'So the God of Pleasure with enough connections and resources to move the entire world will finally be using his powers, huh? I cannot wait to see how the Divine Heavens will react once they learn of this...' Tang Lingxi thought to herself with an impatient smile on her face.

Su Yang continued to stare outside the window at the Profound Blossom Sect.

'Wait for me, everyone. Once I return, I will create a home—a paradise where we can love and embrace each other without a care in the world for the rest of our lives, just like I'd promised.'

Chapter 613 - Divine Nature Garden

Two weeks have passed since Su Yang cultivated with the Fang Sisters and shared his future plans with Tang Lingxi.

Nothing notable happened during this time, and Su Yang would continue to spend each day either cultivating with the disciples or giving lectures to the other disciples.

"It's about time I check on those three cute alchemy disciples of mine." Su Yang said to Tang Lingxi before leaving the Profound Blossom Sect.

"If I recall correctly, the Divine Nature Garden should be around this area..." Su Yang flew around the place on the flying ship until he could see their sect.

Sometime later, he arrived at the Divine Nature Garden, one of the few sects in the Eastern Continent that specialized in medicine and alchemy.

As Su Yang approached the sect, he could smell a strong medicine aroma in the air that instantly relaxed his mind. It was so strong in fact that if someone that didn't know anything about their sect were to walk by this place, they would easily realize the type of sect his place was.

"You there with a suspicious appearance! Stop right there!" The guards by the entrance shouted at Su Yang who was in his disguise after seeing his approaching figure.

"Identify yourself! And what are you doing at our Divine Nature Garden?!" They continued to speak after Su Yang stopped approaching them. Find authorized novels in , faster updates, better experience, Please click /book/dual-cultivation_11793789806524505/divine-nature-garden_50345338560630399 for visiting.

"I am here for the Sect Master and his disciple, Luo Yixiao. Bring them out there." Su Yang said to them.

"Hah? Who do you think you are? Neither the Sect Master nor the Young Lady is someone you can meet with just because you asked!"

"Unless you have an appointment with them, you can scram!" The guards said to him.

"..."

Su Yang sighed inwardly before saying, "I have already told them that I would be coming around this time. Did they not mention this to you? Regardless, I don't have the time to play games with you. If you won't tell them to come out, I will go in there myself."

"The audacity! Where do you think you are?! This is the Divine Nature Garden, where the majority of the top pills in the Eastern Continent originate from! We even have the Xie Family's backing! Unless you don't treasure your life, you better get the hell out of here!"

"If you continue to bother us, losing your life will be the least of your worries!"

The guards remained adamant about chasing him away.

"Listen here, I am—"

"Your identity no longer matters anymore! You are not welcomed here!"

"This is our last warning for you! Scram!"

After being interrupted by the guard before he can even introduce himself, Su Yang sighed out loud, "If you won't even listen to me, I won't waste my breath anymore."

He has given up on trying to convince them and began approaching the sect once again.

"You dare?!"

The guards immediately pointed their weapons at him with their True Spirit Realm cultivation bases coursing through their bodies.

However...

Pap! Pap!

Su Yang used the Nine Astral Steps to instantly get in front of the guards before sending them flying with a slap on their faces.

"You are lucky that my disciple lives here, or else I would've killed you without any hesitation." Su Yang said to them as he entered the sect.

After Su Yang entered the sect, one of the guards outside retrieved a red pill from his pocket and lit it on fire before tossing it into the air.

BOOM!

The pill exploded into a red cloud once it reached the peak, immediately alerting the disciples and sect elders within the sect.

"It's a red warning from the guards outside! We are being attacked!"

"F.u.c.k! Of all days, why must this happen when the Sect Master is in closed cultivation?!"

Nearly every sect elder in the sect began rushing towards the front of the sect where the entrance was located whilst the disciples gathered in the center of the sect as they'd practiced hundreds of times in case of such situations.

'Haaa... why must they make this even more complicated?' Su Yang sighed inwardly after being surrounded by the sect elders.

"Who the hell are you?! And why are you attacking this place?!"

Although the sect elders were surprised to see that it was only a single individual attacking their entire sect, they didn't dare to underestimate Su Yang who was emitting a formidable aura that made them feel powerless.

"My surname is Xiao, and I am here to pick up Luo Yixiao, my disciple." Su Yang said to them.

"Eh? Luo Yixiao's Master? But her Master is—"

The sect elders quickly realized the situation, but they were still doubtful.

"How do we know that you're the real person and not some impersonator trying to kidnap Luo Yixiao? After all, you did force your way into this place..." One of the sect elders said to him.

"You'll know the truth once you bring your Sect Master or even Luo Yixiao herself here." Su Yang said.

"That's going to be quite difficult, as Luo Yixiao has not appeared for almost a month now and only the Sect Master knows of her location. However, the Sect Master is also unavailable since he's in closed cultivation right now..." The sect elder explained the situation to him.

"That's quite problematic indeed." Su Yang nodded.

A few moments later, he continued speaking, "Then bring a cauldron to me. I'll use my alchemy skills to prove my identity."

"You want to use alchemy to prove your identity...?" The sect elders exchanged perplexed gazes, as they have never experienced such a weird situation before.

However, if this intruder really turns out to be the real deal, they would be able to experience for themselves his otherworldly alchemy abilities that were said to have shocked even the top alchemy experts in this world including their own Sect Master.

"Okay, we'll let you concoct a pill to prove your identity."

In midst of the deafening silence, an old man stepped forward and said loudly.

"Head Elder!" The sect elders were surprised to see this person, who was only second to the Sect Master, agree to Su Yang's suggestion.

Chapter 614 - The Real Deal

After the Head Elder agreed to let Su Yang concoct a pill to prove his identity, they brought him to the lecture stage, where the sect elders usually go to demonstrate their alchemy abilities in public so the other disciples can watch and learn from them.

"This is quite the audience." Su Yang said as he looked around the spectators' seats that were already filled to the brim with disciples and sect elders, almost as though every disciple in this sect was present.

"It would be a great honor if they could witness the Alchemy Master's alchemy skills, after all." The Head Elder said to him.

"Does that mean you consider me as the real one? If that's the case, why should I do this anymore?" Su Yang asked him with a calm smile behind his mask.

The Head Elder showed him a sly smile and said, "It would only be an honor if you were the real deal, and without seeing your abilities, even I cannot say for sure that you're the real Alchemy Master who discovered the Earth Advancement Pills and the Heaven Transcendence Pills."

"Is that so?" Su Yang could instantly see through the Head Elder's intentions, but he pretended to be ignorant since it wouldn't harm him in any way to show their disciples some of his alchemy skills.

Sometime later, before thousands of gazes, Su Yang stepped onto the stage and stood before the cauldron they had prepared for him.

"I don't have the ingredients to concoct an Earth Advancement Pill or the Heaven Transcendence Pill right now, so I will concoct any pill you want." Su Yang said to them.

"Then I would like you to concoct the Heaven Lotus Pill— a Heaven-grade pill that even the Sect Master cannot concoct consistently." Head Elder said to him before ordering someone to bring them the ingredients.

A few minutes later, the Head Elder showed the pill and ingredients to Su Yang before speaking, "If you are truly the Alchemy Master from the Holy Central Continent, then you should be able to concoct the Heaven Lotus Pill without the recipe, right?"

Su Yang looked at the Heaven Lotus Pill for a moment before glancing at the ingredients by his side.

A smile then surfaced on his face, and he said, "You are missing one ingredient that's required for this pill."

"What?" A surprised expression appeared on the Head Elder's face, and he immediately looked at the ingredients closely this time.

'He's right! There really is one ingredient missing! And while it's not the most important ingredient for the pill, missing it will make it impossible to concoct the pill! How is this possible? Can he really tell the recipe just by looking at the pill? Could it be that he'd concocted this pill before? No, that's not possible, as the Heaven Lotus Pill was only discovered last year by the Sect Master, and it hasn't even been released to the public yet!' The Head Elder was profoundly shocked inwardly.

'Perhaps this man is truly the real deal!'

A moment later, the Head Elder slapped the individual who brought the ingredients and shouted at him angrily, "Did you purposefully forget one of the ingredients so that he would be unable to prove his identity?! Do you have no honor?! How are you going to be responsible if he turns out to be the real deal?!"

"T-This disciple wouldn't dare! It was truly a mistake and coincidence that I forgot one of the ingredients!" The person cried with an apologetic expression.

"I deeply apologize for this mishap. It was never our intention to rig the test. I hope you can forgive us." The Head Elder lowered his head to Su Yang but mostly because he already knew in his heart that Su Yang was the real deal.

"Since you are so polite, I will consider this mishap as though it's part of the test." Su Yang said.

"Thank you..." Head Elder said.

Meanwhile, the other disciples and sect elders were dumbfounded when they saw the Head Elder lower his head to Su Yang. Does this mean the Head Elder already recognizes him as the real Alchemy Master?

"Anyway, bring the last ingredient so I can begin." Su Yang then said.

"Right away."

The Head Elder made the individual who screwed up fetch the final ingredient.

Sometime later, once all of the ingredients were gathered, Su Yang began concocting the pill.

"What fierce yet docile flames! I have never seen such wonderful flame control before!" Head Elder and the other disciples gasped in awe when they saw how Su Yang flawlessly controlled the flames around the cauldron.

And just by looking at Su Yang's control over his alchemy flames, the disciples there already began recognizing him as the real deal.

Once the cauldron was heated to the perfect temperature, Su Yang grabbed the ingredients beside him and tossed all of them into the cauldron, shocking the spectators.

"It's just like the rumors! He actually tossed all of the ingredients into the cauldron without any hesitation! He's the real deal!"

One major point the people made when speaking about the Alchemy Master from the Holy Central Continent was his god-like ability to purify multiple ingredients at once, and after witnessing it for themselves, it was truly as shocking and jaw-dropping as the rumors made it sound.

A few minutes later, Su Yang retrieved the flame around the cauldron and opened the lid, and black smoke rushed out the next moment.

"What? Did he burn the pill?" The spectators were dumbfounded to see the black smoke as they only appear when someone burns a pill.

However, when Su Yang retrieved a pure white pill from the cauldron a moment later, the spectators exploded with excitement and admiration.

"The pill was not burned!"

"He actually succeeded concocting the pill on his first try! And it'd only taken him a few minutes!"

"Compared to the Sect Master, who would need an entire day to concoct the pill with less than 10% chance of success, the disparity is simply too vast— like heaven and earth!"

"He's the real deal! The real Alchemy Master from the Holy Central Continent!"

Chapter 615 - Only a Slight Inconvenience

"M-May I take a look at the Heaven Lotus Pill?" The Head Elder asked him in a shaky voice and his gaze filled with a feeling of yearning.

"Go ahead. You can even keep it." Su Yang said as he tossed the Heaven Lotus Pill at him in a carefree manner, treating it as though it was nothing of value.

"Ah!" The Head Elder hastily went to catch the pill in the air with a horrified expression on his face, feeling as though his heart was going to burst from shock.

"T-Thank heavens I caught it..." The Head Elder sighed in relief afterward, yet his hands were still trembling as though he was having a seizure.

"Now that I have demonstrated my abilities, do you still doubt my identity?" Su Yang asked him a moment later.

"This Junior apologizes for doubting the Senior! I will immediately notify the Sect Master of your arrival!" The Head Elder said before disappearing from the place shortly later.

The disciples and other sect elders stared at Su Yang with gazes of admiration and respect.

"I can't believe that I just got to witness Senior Xiao's abilities with my very own eyes!"

"Right?! I have been dreaming of this exact moment ever since I heard of his capabilities! To think my dream would come true so quickly!"

"This is all thanks to Senior apprentice-sister Luo! If not for her, who managed to pass the exam and become his disciple, he wouldn't even be here right now!"

Meanwhile, inside the Sect Master's home, the Head Elder knocked on the doors loudly.

"Sect Master! This is an emergency! Please come out!"

Sometime later, Senior Zeng opened the door with his face twisted in anger. "You imbecile! Did I not warn you to not bother me no matter what?! Because of you, I accidentally burned the Heaven Lotus Pill again!"

The Head Elder then said with a frown on his face, "You also told me to tell you if Senior Xiao visits our sect no matter what you are doing!"

"What? Senior Xiao is here?" Senior Zeng's eyes widened with surprise, and the anger on his face immediately went away.

"Why didn't you say that first!"

"Because you never gave me the chance to! Anyway, look at this..." The Head Elder then showed the flawless quality Heaven Lotus Pill to Senior Zeng.

"Heavens! How on earth?!" Senior Zeng picked up the pill with trembling hands.

"Senior Xiao concocted it..." Head Elder said.

"Eh? Why would he..."

"Well... this is what happened..."

The Head Elder proceeded to explain the situation to Senior Zeng.

"..."

After learning everything from the Head Elder, Senior Zeng's face flushed with anger again.

"Y-You damn idiots! How dare you treat the Senior as though he's some kind of intruder, even making him take a test to prove his identity! How are you going to be responsible if he decides to discard my disciple because of this?!" Senior Zeng roared.

"H-He seemed cool with it, so there shouldn't be a problem..." The Head Elder hastily said as he did not have any excuses to make.

"Whatever! I will deal with you idiots once I get back."

"W-Wait a second, Sect Master! What about the Heaven Lotus Pill?! The Senior said I can have it!" The Head Elder said to him in a panicked voice.

"It's confiscated for now!"

"N-No way!"

Senior Zeng then disappeared before the Head Elder could even begin to complain. He then went to get Luo Yixiao who was also doing closed cultivation within an isolated area of that sect.

"Yixiao! Come out! Senior Xiao is here to pick you up!" Senior Zeng shouted in front of a small building.

A few moments later, Luo Yixiao opened the door and said, "Has it already been a month? Time sure flies when I am studying the techniques the Master gave me..."

Sometime later, Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng arrived at the lecture stage.

"Look! It's the Sect Master and Senior apprentice-sister Luo!"

The disciples and sect elders quickly stopped their chattering and bowed to them after noticing their presence.

However, the two of them ignored everything there and went straight to Su Yang.

"Disciple Luo greets Master." Luo Yixiao bowed to him.

"This Junior greets Senior." Even Senior Zeng bowed to him without hesitation despite being watched by nearly every disciple in the sect.

"You're finally here. It was quite the hassle, you know?" Su Yang said to them in a calm voice.

Hearing this, Senior Zeng immediately kowtowed on the floor and said, "What happened today is entirely my fault! If only I'd lectured my disciples properly! Please! I swear this won't happen ever again! If that's not enough, allow me to bear all of the responsibilities and your anger!"

However, Su Yang merely shook his head and said, "It was only a slight inconvenience for me, that's all. I'm not really angry."

"Anyway, I have spent enough time here, and I still need to pick up the other two."

He then turned to look at Luo Yixiao and asked her, "Are you ready to leave?"

"Yes, Master!" she nodded.

"Good luck, Yixiao. Remember to not cause any trouble for the Senior." Senior Zeng said to her with a parting smile, looking as though he was sending his daughter off to another family.

"What are you talking about? You are also coming with us." Su Yang suddenly said, dumbfounding him.

"Eh? Me?" he pointed at himself with a dazed face.

"Teaching an additional person won't make much of a difference. Though, I won't force you. If you don't want to come, you can stay here." Su Yang said to him.

"I-I am willing to come! No— please let me come with you!" Senior Zeng immediately said with a blissful expression.

Su Yang nodded, "You can come, but just remember one thing. I am not accepting you as my disciple, and I am only letting you participate in our lecture as a guest."

"I will definitely keep that in mind!" he quickly said.

"Thank you, Master..." Luo Yixiao also thanked him, as she had a feeling that he was doing this for her.

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng onto the flying boat with him and began making his way towards the Cai Family that was located near the Western Borders at Red Sparrow City.

Chapter 616 - An Awkward Situation

Once they arrived at Red Sparrow City, Su Yang looked for the largest building from the sky.

"That should be the place." Su Yang mumbled to himself after seeing a massive building that occupied a few blocks in the streets.

A few moments later, he descended in front of their entrance.

When he saw the guards standing by the entrance, Su Yang approached them and said, "I am—"

"You must be Senior Xiao, here to pick up the Young Lady, right?!" The guards immediately recognized him and bowed to him in a respectful manner.

"Yes, I am." Su Yang nodded with a pleasantly surprised expression, as he'd expected to encounter a similar situation as he did with the guards at the Divine Nature Garden.

"I am truly sorry, Senior Xiao..." Senior Zeng couldn't help but feel the need to apologize to him again after seeing the Cai Family's competent guards. "I will definitely lecture those idiots properly when I return..."

"The Young Lady is currently studying in her room, please follow me."

The guard then led Su Yang inside the building.

When they passed by the servants inside, all of them would bow to him as if they knew his identity.

'The Cai Family is well prepared...' Senior Zeng sighed inwardly after seeing how the Cai Family welcomed Su Yang and comparing it to how his Divine Nature Garden treated him.

Sometime later, they arrived at Cai Yan's room.

Knock *Knock*

"Young Lady! Senior Xiao is here to pick you up!" The guard said after loudly knocking on the door.

A few moments later, Cai Yan opened the door and bowed to Su Yang, "Disciple Cai greets the Master. Thank you for coming all the way here to pick me up."

Su Yang then asked her, "Are you ready to leave?"

Cai Yan nodded and said, "Yes, we can leave at any moment."

"Good, then let's pick up the last one."

Once they were outside, Su Yang retrieved the flying ship and said, "Since this thing is not meant to fit so many people at once, it will be a bit cramped."

"Oh..." Cai Yan blushed slightly when Su Yang suddenly hugged her close to his body so that they would have enough room to fit all four of them inside the small boat.

"I'm going to drop you off at the Burning Lotus Sect before I pick up Bai Lihua." Su Yang said to them.

A few minutes later, Su Yang dropped the three of them in front of Wang Shuren's house at the Burning Lotus Sect before going to the Heavenly Swan Sect.

"Hm? What are you guys doing outside of my house?" Wang Shuren asked them with a puzzled expression after they knocked on her door.

"Eh? Did the Master not tell you about our arrival?" Cai Yan asked her. "He was the one who brought us here..."

"Su— Master? I didn't hear anything about this..." Wang Shuren shook her head.

"Anyway, since the Master brought you here, come inside. We'll understand the situation once we ask him."

Meanwhile, at the Heavenly Swan Sect, Su Yang landed the flying ship right in front of Bai Lihua's doorsteps before knocking on her door.

However, after receiving zero responses for a few minutes, Su Yang decided to use his spiritual sense to see whether she was home or not.

When he sensed Bai Lihua's presence inside her room, Su Yang raised his eyebrows. Did he not knock on the door loud enough?

"Wait... this is..."

Su Yang suddenly frowned, and he forcefully kicked the door open the next second before rushing into her room.

Inside the room Bai Lihua was laying on the bed, seemingly asleep, yet there was an unpleasant expression on her face, almost like she was having nightmares, and her robes were soaked in cold sweat.

"Complexion pale as sheets, sweating profusely, body slightly trembling... She's ill?" Su Yang could tell that she was sick at a glance, but without proper diagnosis, he won't know the real problem at hand.

He immediately grabbed her hands and checked her pulses.

"Her spiritual energy is a mess! What on earth did she do to make herself so ill?" The frown on Su Yang's face deepened.

"Hm? This smell is..."

Su Yang approached Bai Lihua's lips and sniffed the subtle but unpleasant scent coming from her breath.

"This is the smell of medicine... And it's even poisonous? Why would she consume any medicine with poison?"

Although he was baffled by the confusing situation, Su Yang did not stand around to ponder and quickly went back outside and jumped on the flying ship before soaring back to the Burning Lotus Sect at max speed.

Once he returned to Wang Shuren's house, he tore down the door with a vicious kick and rushed into Wang Shuren's medicine room.

"W-What the?!"

Wang Shuren and the others in the house were shocked when the door was suddenly destroyed with force. However, their shock turned into bewilderment when they realized who was responsible for it a moment later.

"Su— Master?! Why are you in such a hurry?!" Wang Shuren asked him in a confused voice.

"No time to explain now! I will do it later!" Su Yang said as he rushed into Wang Shuren's medicine room.

Inside the medicine room, Su Yang swiftly but calmly grabbed a dozen different medicines.

Once he had all of the medicine he needed, Su Yang went to the pill room next and tossed all of the medicine he just took from the medicine room into the cauldron.

"He's concocting a pill now?" Wang Shuren was stumped by Su Yang's incomprehensible actions.

Less than a minute later, Su Yang left the pill room with a freshly made pill in his hands.

He then jumped on the flying ship and soared back to the Heavenly Swan Sect, leaving Wang Shuren feeling as though she'd just been robbed in broad daylight and before her very eyes.

Upon returning to Bai Lihua's room, Su Yang tossed the pill inside his mouth and crushed it into small pieces. He then drank some water without swallowing it.

Once the pill and the crushed pill inside his mouth was mixed together, Su Yang removed his mask and opened Bai Lihua's mouth with his hands.

A second later, he pressed his lips onto Bai Lihua's lips before forcing the liquid in his mouth down her throat.

However, Su Yang could not relax yet and reached for her robes a moment later.

"Excuse me." He said out loud before ripping the upper half of her robes wide open, revealing a beautiful pair of b.r.e.a.s.ts.

Unfortunately, he was not in the situation or mood to admire the scene and immediately used his finger to press very precise locations on her chest.

A few moments later, Bai Lihua began coughing loudly.

Cough *Cough*

Cough

Cough *Cough*

After a few rounds of coughing, Bai Lihua coughed up a semi-solid ball of green and black substance that reeked of a foul smell.

Seeing the poison that was harming Bai Lihua out of her body, Su Yang finally released a sigh of relief.

Sometime later, Bai Lihua slowly opened her eyes.

"Su Yang...?" Bai Lihua mumbled his name after seeing his face sitting in front of her.

"Wait... Master?!" Once her consciousness began clearing, she realized that it was her Master who resembled Su Yang that was in her room.

Then she noticed that the upper half of her robes were loosened and that her mouth had a weird and foreign taste to it.

"M-Master, you..." Bai Lihua looked at him with a terrified expression on her face, looking as though she'd just been assaulted while she was asleep.

However, no words came out of her mouth, as she was simply shocked speechless by the situation.

"Ahem!"

Su Yang suddenly cleared his throat and said, "Before you think of me as some predator who would assault women when they are asleep from pain, allow me a moment to explain the situation to you."

He proceeded to explain the situation to her from the beginning.

"I came to pick you up, but you didn't answer the door, so I used my spiritual sense to see if you were home. When I realized the situation, I allowed myself into your room to check on your condition. After understanding that you had somehow ingested poison, I went to concoct an antidote."

"I returned here as soon as I had the antidote and immediately fed it to you. But since you were unconscious, I had to force-feed it to you through the mouth. However, the antidote alone was not enough to get rid of the poison in your body, so I had to perform some acupuncture on your chest to make you cough up the poison. I hope this is enough to clear up the misunderstanding."

"If you want more proof, look at the poison you'd just coughed up." Su Yang pointed at the nasty substance beside her.

"..."

Bai Lihua listened to Su Yang's explanation with a dazed expression on her face, and once she realized the terrible mistake she'd just made, her face flushed with embarrassment and shame.

"I-I-I don't know how to apologize to you, Master! To think I had even thought for a moment that you were that type of person when in reality you'd just saved my life!" Bai Lihua immediately kowtowed on the floor before him, even banging her head on the solid floor.

"Calm down. Although the poison is out of your body, you are still injured." Su Yang said to her.

Chapter 617 - Spanking Her Buttocks

"Even if you forgive me, I will never be able to forgive myself for this mistake! I'm truly sorry, Master!" Bai Lihua continued to kowtow to him, feeling as though she'd committed something even worse than treason.

"Please, punish me so I can feel less guilty! I won't complain even if you disown me as your disciple!" Bai Lihua said.

"You want me to punish you?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Yes, please! Or this guilt in my heart will not subdue!" She insisted.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang sighed and said, "Very well, turn around."

Bai Lihua immediately turned around without questioning him.

A second later...

PAP!

Su Yang spanked Bai Lihua's buttocks so hard that she nearly pissed herself.

"Aaaah!" Bai Lihua moaned in pain with pleasure mixed within her voice.

"M-Master... it hurts..." Bai Lihua said a moment later, feeling a stinging sensation on her buttocks.

"Naturally. Or else it wouldn't be a punishment but a reward instead." Su Yang said.

"Anyway, tell me about your situation. Although I already have an idea what happened here, I still want to hear it from you."

Bai Lihua nodded with teary eyes and began explaining how she'd got into such a dangerous situation.

"After studying the techniques you gave me, I had an urge to impress you, so I started making pills by myself. Of course, I would burn even the easiest pills at first, but after a few days of practice, I've managed to stop burning the pills once in a while."

"However, while I have stopped burning every pill, they were all of the lowest quality and too dangerous for consumption because they were filled with impurity."

"Then just a few days ago, I finally concocted a pill that was safe for consumption, so I..."

"So you consumed it?" Su Yang continued it for her.

"Yes, Master... And because I didn't know how much I was improving, I ate every pill that was safe for consumption to experience my own improvements..."

Su Yang sighed at her words and said, "I applaud your enthusiasm in alchemy and feel flattered that you wanted to impress me, but using your own body to experiment on your own pills as a novice Alchemist is quite the dumb thing to do, as you might accidentally poison yourself like today..."

"I won't do it again, Master," she said with an apologetic face.

"I am not saying you shouldn't consume your own pills ever again, but you are still too inexperienced for that kind of stuff. Once you are more experienced, it's only natural for you to do it." Su Yang said, and he

continued, "Anyway, I'd planned on giving you lectures today, but you are in no condition for that. Spend the next few days removing the impurities you'd built up instead."

"What about my lecture?" she asked, still feeling the desire to learn, as she'd grown increasingly fond of Alchemy after doing it for herself.

"I will give it to you once you are fully healed," he said.

"Thank you, Master."

"Then I will leave you alone now."

Once Su Yang left the place, Bai Lihua stood up with her hands on the buttocks that Su Yang had violated with pain.

"I didn't think he'd spank me for my mistakes as if I was a child..." Bai Lihua sighed deeply, still feeling a weird sensation on her butt.

"What a blunder I've made today! I just hope he won't see me as a weird woman now..."

After sighing for a few more times, Bai Lihua went to cultivate to remove the impurities she'd built up from consuming her own pills.

Meanwhile, after returning to Wang Shuren's home, Su Yang explained the situation to them.

"Unbelievable... To think that Bai Lihua would poison herself with her own pills..." Wang Shuren didn't know how to feel about this incident, as it was weird for someone like Bai Lihua to make such a mistake.

However, Senior Zeng, on the other hand, was impressed by Bai Lihua.

"She has never studied Alchemy before you accepted her as a disciple, right? It's actually quite remarkable that she'd learned how to concoct pills by herself in just a few short weeks! As expected of Senior Xiao's disciple— she's a true genius." Senior Zeng spoke in a praising tone.

"Yes, I was also surprised to hear that she had learned to concoct pills by herself. However, having talents won't mean a thing if she can't use it because she's dead." Su Yang sighed.

"Honestly, what happened to Sect Master Bai isn't all that uncommon. There will be at least one or two disciples in the Divine Nature Garden that would poison themselves from swallowing their own pill every year, but that only happens to novice Alchemists that are too dedicated in their own work." Senior Zeng said.

"Anyway, since Sect Master Bai will not be attending the lecture, what are we going to do?" he then asked.

"We'll have to continue without her for now." Su Yang said.

Sometime later, Su Yang brought the four of them into the pill room and said to Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao, "Since the two of you already have years of experience in Alchemy, I won't be giving you any lectures for now. Instead, I will have you participate in some exercises that will significantly boost your ability to concoct pills."

"Really? There are such profound exercises?" Senior Zeng's eyes immediately shone with excitement, looking like a child who just received his first toy.

Su Yang nodded and said, "It's really simple, too."

He then looked at Wang Shuren and asked her, "Can you bring two more cauldrons in here?"

A few minutes later, Wang Shuren returned with two new cauldrons and placed each of them in the corner of the room.

Su Yang then went outside for a minute and came back with a few buckets of water and some ingredients.

He proceeded to pour water into both cauldrons until they were filled to the brim with water, and then he tossed the ingredients inside.

"Go ahead and use your alchemy flames to heat up the cauldron. However, I want it to be exactly 300 celsius, and you have to keep it at that temperature for over an hour without changing the temperature."

"Not even a single celsius?" Senior Zeng raised his eyebrows.

"Did I stutter?" Su Yang responded in a serious tone.

"I understand..." Senior Zeng nodded, and he immediately went to heat up the cauldron.

However, he quickly realized that no matter how strong his alchemy flames were, the cauldron would only heat up to 200 celsius and would not increase anymore until at least ten minutes later, and when the temperature did increase, it only went up by one or two celsius.

"W-What's happening? Why isn't the cauldron heating up?" Senior Zeng mumbled with a confused face, as this is his first time encountering such a problem.

"Is it because of the mixture you put inside the cauldron beforehand, Master?" Luo Yixiao asked him with a sweaty forehead.

"That's right. The mixture inside the cauldron will absorb most of the heat from your alchemy flames, making it much harder for you to heat up the cauldron itself. If you want to reach the goal, you'll have to strengthen your alchemy flames."

"Increasing the power and heat of our alchemy flames is easier said than done, as that requires years of practice!" Senior Zeng said.

"Is it really?" Su Yang asked him.

"W-What do you mean?"

Su Yang then said, "Just like how one can quickly increase their stamina if they exert themselves to their limit, you can quickly strengthen your alchemy flames by exerting yourself. All you really need to do is push yourselves and heat the cauldron as though you are trying to melt the cauldron itself."

"But how are we going to control the flames if we have to exert so much energy? We won't be able to control the temperature, much less maintain one!" Senior Zeng said with wide eyes.

"One step at a time, old man. You can worry about controlling the flames after you can heat the cauldron up to 300 celsius." Su Yang said.

"..."

Although Senior Zeng still had plenty of questions, he decided to keep them to himself, as he didn't want to appear too distrusting and was afraid that it might anger Su Yang.

Shortly later, Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao returned to heating the cauldron, but they were no longer controlling their alchemy flames and exerted all of their spiritual energy, causing the flames to go crazy.

However, even when using all of their strength, neither Senior Zeng or Luo Yixiao could reach a temperature higher than 250 before they run out of spiritual energy and collapse from exhaustion.

"Until you can maintain the temperature I want for an hour, I will have you continue doing this exercise. If you cannot achieve it even after one month, I will no longer lecture you, and in Luo Yixiao's case, I will let you go as my disciple."

When they heard Su Yang's words, their hearts became filled with anxiousness, and they immediately began heating the cauldron again despite their exhaustion, only stopping once they've truly lost consciousness.

Chapter 618 - Jade Flames

While Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao continued to do their exercise, Su Yang said to Cai Yan, "Since you have never concocted pills before, I am going to teach you step by step."

"How much of the technique did you learn?" He then asked her.

"I understand most of it, Master."

"Good. That will make things much easier," he said.

"What should I do, Master?" Wang Shuren suddenly asked him, feeling slightly left out now that there were other disciples beside herself.

"Hm? You can do whatever you want until it's your turn." Su Yang said.

"I understand..." Wang Shuren sighed inwardly before going to concoct some pills.

"Now, let's begin your lectures." Su Yang said once Cai Yan sat before the cauldron.

"Before we can even start concocting pills, we need to see what kind of Alchemy flames you were born with."

"Not everyone is born with alchemy flames, but I can sense it in your spiritual energy, so you should have it."

Cai Yan nodded and closed her eyes to focus on the technique she'd been practicing for the past month.

A few minutes later, a small ball of pale green flames appeared before her.

"Oh? Your alchemy flames actually turned out to be Jade Flames? That's a very pleasant surprise." Su Yang said.

Just like Zhu Mengyi in the Holy Central Continent who was born with unique Azure Flames, Cai Yan was gifted with her own unique alchemy flames that are known as Jade Flames, a powerful but hard to control type of alchemy flame.

"What? Unique Alchemy Flames?" Wang Shuren stopped concocting pills to turn around and stare at the green flames floating above Cai Yan's palm. While she has heard rumors before, this is actually her first time seeing someone with unique alchemy flames.

"How lucky! If only I was born with unique alchemy flames, my life as an alchemist would be much easier..." Wang Shuren sighed loudly.

Hearing her sigh, Su Yang looked at her and said, "Being gifted with unique alchemy flames does not always mean having an easy life as an alchemist."

"What do you mean? Unique alchemy flames are basically a superior version of regular alchemy flames, right?"

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "While having unique alchemy flames may indeed be advantageous in many situations, but because of their own uniqueness they are also much more difficult to control and master."

"It's like being born with a Heavenly Constitution but not knowing how to train that body properly, which might cause more harm than good to your cultivation."

"And if a novice like Cai Yan with her Jade Flames is taught by someone incompetent, her life as an Alchemist would only become miserable, perhaps even ending in a tragedy."

"Anyway, if you also want to have unique alchemy flames, it's not impossible." Su Yang suddenly said to Wang Shuren, causing her eyes to widen with shock.

"You mean I can also have unique Alchemy Flames?! I thought you can only be born with it!" Wang Shuren exclaimed in a bewildered voice.

"No, you too can have unique alchemy flames if you absorb one. However, I doubt you will be able to find any alchemy flames in this world, as they require hundreds of thousands of years to grow."

"You can absorb unique alchemy flames?! This is the first time I've heard of this! And what do you mean 'grow'? How does one grow alchemy flames?!" Wang Shuren quickly asked him.

"Alchemy Flames are no different than Spiritual Treasures in the sense that they can both be created naturally, but Alchemy Flames normally take longer to appear due to their unique nature.

"..."

Wang Shuren was speechless. However, her heart throbbed with excitement knowing that she might be able to use unique alchemy flames in the future.

"Anyway, if you want to know more about alchemy flames, I will tell you all about them later." Su Yang said before returning to Cai Yan.

"Now that we know you have Jade Flames, I will have to change your training methods."

Cai Yan nodded with a calm face.

"It will take some time for me to write the techniques, so I will have you familiarize yourself with the Jade Flame for now."

He then said to Wang Shuren, "I want you to teach her the basics of flame control and make sure that nothing goes wrong while I create the techniques for her."

"Just the basics, right? You can leave this to me." Wang Shuren nodded with a confident expression on her face.

Once Su Yang went away to write the new techniques for Cai Yan, Wang Shuren said to her, "The easiest way to familiarize yourself with your alchemy flames is simply by using it. Here, try to light a fire underneath the cauldron by controlling your spiritual energy and imaging a fire appearing under the cauldron." Wang Shuren pointed at her cauldron.

Cai Yan nodded and took a deep breath before creating a small flame under the cauldron.

"Good. Now keep it like that for as long as possible."

However, the Jade Flames disappeared only a few seconds later, and Cai Yan began panting heavily, seeming out of energy already.

"Eh? What happened? That wasn't even ten seconds!" Wang Shuren asked her with a dumbfounded face.

"I...I don't know..." Cai Yan said in an exhausted voice. "I tried to keep the alchemy flames active, but my spiritual energy depleted before I even realized."

"Do unique alchemy flames really consume that much spiritual energy? Even novice Alchemists at the Elementary Spirit Realm can maintain their alchemy flames for around 10 ten minutes before they run out of spiritual energy, but you can't even do it for a full minute while being at the fourth level True Spirit Realm! This is too weird!"

"Perhaps this is what Su— Master meant when he said that having unique alchemy flames does not automatically mean having an easy life as an alchemist..." Wang Shuren finally understood Su Yang's words.

"What should I do now, Senior Sister?" Cai Yan asked her with a dejected look. How will she ever concoct pills if she cannot even maintain her alchemy flames long enough to heat up the cauldron, much less concoct a pill?

"You can only increase your spiritual energy at this point, right? But how much spiritual energy would you need to maintain such energy-consuming alchemy flames?" Wang Shuren shook her head a moment later and sighed, "I guess I am the 'incompetent' teacher Master mentioned in this situation..."

"Well, there's not much we can do at this point but wait until the Master finishes whatever he's doing." Wang Shuren said.

However, Cai Yan wasn't willing to give up so easily and continued to try to maintain her Jade Flames.

Sometime later.

"Haaa... haaa... This is impossible..." Cai Yan eventually gave up after failing a dozen times. "Maintaining the Jade Flames is not possible when it quickly consumes all of my spiritual energy and I have no control over it..."

"Why don't we ask Senior Zeng? Although he might not be at Master's level, he's still a very prominent Alchemist with decades of experience. Perhaps he might know a thing or two about your Jade Flames. I'm going to wake him up." Wang Shuren said before nudging Senior Zeng awake from his slumber.

"Huh? Did I fall unconscious again from exhaustion?" Senior Zeng sat up with a tired look.

"Yes, you did, but that's not why I woke you up." Wang Shuren said, and she continued, "Do you know anything about unique alchemy flames?"

"Unique Alchemy Flames? Now that's a term you don't hear every day." Senior Zeng nodded.

"Although I know a thing or two about unique alchemy flames, I cannot say that I know very much about it because they are extremely rare. Why do you ask?"

Hearing his question, Wang Shuren turned to look at Cai Yan and said to her, "Show it to him."

A few moments later, Cai Yan summoned the Jade Flames for a brief moment.

However, that brief moment was more than enough to shock Senior Zeng wide awake.

"Unique Alchemy Flames?! You actually have unique alchemy flames?! Heavens! This is only my second time seeing someone with such a gift!" He exclaimed with excitement.

"Oh? So you know someone else who has unique alchemy flames?" Wang Shuren's eyes flickered with interest.

However, Senior Zeng's expression darkened after hearing her inquiry, and he spoke in a solemn voice a moment later, "Yes, I knew of someone who used to have purple-colored alchemy flames. However, that person died in an accident when he lost control over his own alchemy flames, burning himself until only his ashes were left."

"..." Wang Shuren and Cai Yan stared at him with a horrified look on their faces.

"T-This person burned himself to death using his own alchemy flames?" Cai Yan asked for confirmation.

Senior Zeng nodded before sighing, "He was a talented young man who was also my first disciple. However, because I knew nothing about his purple flames at that time, I was unable to guide him properly, which ended in that horrible accident."

"..."

Wang Shuren was speechless, as she didn't think that he would have such a tragic history!

Chapter 619 - It's Not Too Late to Quit

"I'm sorry... I didn't know you had such a history." Wang Shuren said a moment later.

"It's fine. Since it was something that happened over 150 years ago..." Senior Zeng sighed, and then he looked at the still unconscious Luo Yixiao and continued, "I haven't accepted another disciple ever since then, but that changed when I met Yixiao, who was brimming with talent in alchemy, which helped me finally overcome my trauma."

He then said to Cai Yan, "I'm sorry, but I won't be able to give you any advice regarding your unique alchemy flames, as I still fear that my incompetence might harm you like with my previous disciple."

Wang Shuren nodded and said, "I also think we should wait for the Master to return before we do anything we might regret. Heaven knows what he might do to me if I accidentally hinder your potential with my lecturing..."

After listening to Senior Zeng's past, Wang Shuren feared that Cai Yan might accidentally harm herself, so she refrained from giving her any more advice.

"I understand..." Cai Yan nodded.

Although she was slightly disheartened that they were unable to help her, there was simply nothing they could do at this moment besides wait for Su Yang to return.

"While I cannot give you advice on your alchemy flames I can help you with pill concocting because no matter what kind of alchemy flames you have, the basics are all the same." Wang Shuren then said to her.

"And you don't need alchemy flames to learn about pill concocting, so let's start from the beginning.

Wang Shuren proceeded to explain to Cai Yan the process of pill concocting with details. As for Senior Zeng, he returned to heating the cauldron until he became exhausted again.

Meanwhile, in the other room, Su Yang worked on Cai Yan's technique.

'Your Jade Flames is ranked 98 in the Unique Alchemy Flames ranking and are much stronger than normal alchemy flames, even surpassing many unique alchemy flames in terms of fierceness, so it's only natural that they require more spiritual energy to use than other alchemy flames. Cai Yan is currently only at the True Spirit Realm, and unless she reaches the Earth Spirit Realm she won't be able to use her Jade Flames for longer than a few minutes even with this flame controlling technique...'

After spending many hours writing the technique, Su Yang finally returned to the pill room, where Wang Shuren and Cai Yan were engaged in some sort of conversation regarding the cauldron.

"Master!" Cai Yan's expression immediately brightened after seeing him return.

"You're finally back," said Wang Shuren with a relieved look on her face.

"What's the matter? Why do you look so tired?" Su Yang asked them after seeing their exhausted faces.

"Well, it's like this, Master..." Cai Yan proceeded to explain her situation of not being able to use her alchemy flames for more than a few seconds before running out of spiritual energy.

Hearing this, Su Yang responded in a calm voice, "That's only natural since you don't have any flame controlling technique to properly use your Jade Flames."

"Eh? You mean it has nothing to do with her talent or cultivation base?" Wang Shuren asked him with a surprised look.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Jade Flames are naturally fierce and require more spiritual energy to maintain than even most unique alchemy flames out there. Without a proper flame controlling technique, it will be akin to trying to forcibly move a boulder when there are tools specifically made to help you move the boulder with ease. However, that is not to say her cultivation base is not to blame, as it's also true that she does not have the sufficient cultivation to use her Jade Flames yet."

"If you want to start using your Jade Flames, you must at least be at the Earth Spirit Realm. As for concocting pills, you can think about that once you've reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm."

"I have to reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm before I can start concocting pills?!" Cai Yan exclaimed with a shocked face. How long would that take? Hell, she might not even have the ability to reach the Heavenly Spirit Realm!

Seeing Cai Yan's dejected face, Su Yang said to her, "Didn't I tell you beforehand that not everyone born with unique alchemy flames will automatically have an easy life as an alchemist? The stronger your alchemy flames the more effort you are required to put out. The Jade Flames are fairly powerful even amongst the other unique alchemy flames, so you will have to train harder than most people out there if you want to become an Alchemist."

"Of course, if you want to quit, that's also an option, as you haven't truly stepped into the world of alchemy yet. I also know of many people who wanted to be Alchemists but were unfortunately born with unique alchemy flames that could not be controlled or trained because of a lack of methods and techniques, forcing them to abandon their dream."

Su Yang then extended his arms with a scroll in his hands, "If you are willing to go down this path despite the challenges you will face, accept this. If not, you may shake your head, and I will immediately take you back to your family."

"..."

After a moment of silence, she spoke, "To tell you the truth, Master, I did not willingly take the test to become your disciple because I wanted to learn alchemy. It was purely my father's will that I partake in the exam even if I had no chance of passing. However, when you accepted me as your disciple and I began learning the techniques you gave me, my passion for alchemy started to grow, and after spending an entire month learning more about alchemy, I can say with confidence that I want to become an Alchemist!"

Cai Yan then reached for the scroll in Su Yang's grasp, and a second later, she accepted the technique.

"I hope you won't regret that decision later," Su Yang said with a smile behind his mask.

Chapter 620 - Preparations

"Now that you have accepted the flame controlling technique, I won't let you quit even if you want to," said Su Yang in a calm voice.

"This disciple wouldn't dare even if she were to be tortured by the Master..." Cai Yan said with a smile on her pretty face.

"Anyway, you can start studying the technique now. If there's anything that you don't understand, you can ask me," Su Yang said.

"Yes, Master." Cai Yan nodded before she began looking through the flame controlling technique.

Meanwhile, Su Yang turned his attention to Wang Shuren and asked her, "Do you still want to have unique alchemy flames after realizing the truth?"

She quickly nodded without hesitation, "Yes! So what if I will have to work a little bit harder than other people? It's all worth it if I can become a better Alchemist in the end!"

"...Now that I think about it, you never told me about your reason for becoming an Alchemist," he said to her. "If you don't mind, tell me about it."

"Well, you never asked me about it," she said with a smile before she continued, "I have always wanted to become an Alchemist for as long as I can remember, but I cannot actually recall the exact reason why I picked this path. I guess it's one of those situations where you don't remember why you're doing what you've been doing for many years, but oddly enough, I don't find anything wrong with that, as my passion for Alchemy is as real."

"However, despite my dream to become a top Alchemist, I was only able to enter an average sect like the Burning Lotus Sect and became a sect elder after many years of effort, whilst my reputation as an Alchemist was nearly nonexistence compared to people like Senior Zeng, who is renowned throughout the entire continent."

"If I had never met you, or you did not choose me but someone else as your assistant, I would probably still be working in the Burning Lotus Sect Auction House as a mere manager and without any real reputation." Wang Shuren sighed.

"Now that I think about it, you never told me your reason for picking me," she suddenly asked him. "Surely, there are countless people who would qualify more than me if you searched."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Well, you never asked me."

And then he continued, "As for why I picked you... there is really no reason, as it was mostly on a whim and you were the first person I came across."

"Is that so...? So it was only a coincidence, huh?" Wang Shuren showed a bitter smile after hearing his words.

However, Su Yang continued, "While it's true that it was mostly on a whim, there were a few reasons that caused me to actually go through with it, as I don't usually move just on a 'whim'."

"Really? What is it?" Wang Shuren's eyes immediately glowed with anticipation.

"Well, first and foremost, you are quite the stunning woman, and it only makes sense for a man such as myself to want someone like you around my side."

"..." Wang Shuren's face flushed with redness after hearing his words, but it was not because she was feeling bashful, as she has done many things with him that were more embarrassing than a few words.

In fact, the cause of her redness was due to the other people in the room. What will he do if they realize their real relationship? Since intimate relationships between Masters and Disciples are frowned upon in the cultivation world, it would be better for their relationship to remain hidden.

"..."

Of course, Senior Zeng, Cai Yan, and Luo Yixiao were staring at them with wide and suspicious eyes, wondering if they were really in that kind of relationship.

'I didn't expect the Master to be the flirty type... even towards his own disciple...' Cai Yan thought to herself, wondering if she might receive the same treatment in the future once they know each other better.

"Another reason why I picked you was because of your smell." Su Yang continued, dumbfounding her.

"My...my smell?" Wang Shuren raised her eyebrows awkwardly.

"The smell of medicine was abundant on you when I first met you; it's a smell only those who are always surrounded by medicine would emit, telling me that you are at least somewhat serious when it comes to alchemy."

"Well, there are other reasons, but does it really matter why I chose you at this point?" Su Yang shrugged.

"I guess not..."

"Anyway, you can continue your routine. If you need any 'assistance', you can find me in the other room, where I will be cultivating." Su Yang said.

"And this goes to everyone here. If you need help with something, just knock on the door and I'll help you. Don't be afraid to bother me because that's what it means to be a Master."

Su Yang then left the pill room and went inside Wang Shuren's bedroom, where he sat on the floor and began searching inside his storage ring.

A few seconds later, he looked at the red peanut-sized seed sitting on his palm.

'I should start preparing for when I finally consume this Hellfire Seed,' he thought.

'While I won't have any problems consuming this thing, it's what happens after I swallow this Hellfire Seed that...'

Su Yang suddenly sighed in a low voice, "Will there even be enough partners for me to exhaust the overwhelming amount of Yang Qi I will have afterward?"

This is actually his first time consuming a Hellfire Seed, and he was worried that the disciples from the Profound Blossom Sect wouldn't be nearly enough to satisfy his I.u.s.t after he consumes the seed.

"The Hellfire Seed should be barely enough for me to reach the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm, and if I am going to return to the Divine Heavens in two years, I must increase my cultivation base as much as possible before then." Su Yang stared at the Hellfire Seed with a dazed expression.

"Two years... just wait two more years for me and I will return to your sides..." he mumbled in a longing voice, and he remained sitting there for a long time with a dazed face, seemingly in deep thoughts.

Chapter 621 - A Favor

After spending a few hours concocting pills, Wang Shuren suddenly stood up and said, "I need some advice from the Master. I will be right back."

After announcing her reason for leaving, she quickly went to knock on the door to her own room.

"Come inside," Su Yang's voice resounded a few seconds later.

Wang Shuren then entered the room and closed the door behind her.

"Let's quickly do this before they get suspicious," said Wang Shuren as she began removing her robes.

"What are you so scared of? Are you worried that they might stop respecting you or something?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"That's not it. You probably won't understand it because you are from a dual cultivation sect but in the normal cultivation world, relationsh.i.p.s between Masters and Disciples are frowned upon," she explained to him her worries.

"Ah, I see..." Su Yang nodded after hearing her words.

"But just because it's frowned upon does not mean it's morally wrong or unacceptable. I have done many things that people didn't approve of and even things that made people hate my guts, but I never cared about others' opinions and did whatever I wanted." Su Yang shrugged.

"What exactly did you do?" It was Wang Shuren's turn to raise her eyebrows, her gaze filled the interest.

"The same things I have done for many years— cultivating with beauties," he calmly answered.

"Eh? Why would people hate you for doing something like that?"

"You won't understand it because you have never been to that place, but there are people— women that many people consider sacred and should never be soiled. Of course, as someone who hates being told what I can and cannot do, I went ahead and cultivated with these women, which caused an outrage."

"Why am I not surprised...?" Wang Shuren said with a smile.

"I am more possessive than you might think, Shuren. Back in the days, whenever I saw any beauty was not already taken, I would immediately get to work and make her mine. As for those that already had partners, if they didn't mind, I also wouldn't mind."

"..."

Wang Shuren was speechless, as it sounded like no women under heaven was safe with him around.

"Anyway, come over here. You'll catch a cold if you continue standing there n.a.k.e.d." Su Yang said with a smile.

A few moments later, Su Yang inserted his shaft into her hole and started banging her intensively.

"It's okay to release your voice. I have already surrounded this room with a sound-concealing formation." Su Yang said to her after seeing that she was desperately trying to hold her voice.

"Aaaah~!"

Wang Shuren immediately m.o.a.ned loudly after hearing his words.

And although she was worried about the time at first, once Su Yang started touching her body, Wang Shuren quickly forgot about everything else and only focused on indulging herself in the pleasure.

Time passed quickly, and an hour later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body.

"Aaaaaah!" Wang Shuren's body spasmed violently as her cave gushed with her love juice.

"I cannot return like this, Su Yang... They'll immediately realize what we did..." Wang Shuren said afterward with her entire body soaked in sweat.

"Then don't hide it." He said to her with a mysterious smile on his face. "They will find out the truth sooner or later, anyway."

Hearing his words, Wang Shuren sighed, and she returned to the pill room a few minutes later after tidying her appearance.

However, nobody in the pill room reacted when she returned to the pill; it was almost like they didn't realize she had disappeared for an entire hour, as they were too indulged in their own training.

"..."

Wang Shuren inwardly sighed in relief after seeing this, and she returned to concocting as though nothing had happened.

"..."

Once Wang Shuren was fully focused on the cauldron, the other three in the room glanced at her without moving their heads.

'Is she really going to act as though nothing happened...?' Senior Zeng wondered inwardly.

'Senior sister... is quite darling. How can she act so calmly after what happened?' Cai Yan pondered to herself.

'...' Luo Yixiao was speechless even inwardly, as her mind had been soiled by Wang Shuren's intense m.o.a.ning for the past hour.

Indeed, Su Yang had lied about the sound-concealing formation, and Wang Shuren's loud m.o.a.ning was heard clearly by everyone in this house.

As for why Su Yang would do such a thing, there were two reasons.

One, it was an effective training method for her mentality, and finally, he simply wanted to see her reaction once she realized what really happened.

Unfortunately for Su Yang and fortunately for Wang Shuren, the three people who heard the m.o.a.ning decided to act as though it never happened, so Wang Shuren was able to practice her alchemy in peace for the rest of the day.

A few days later, Su Yang said to them, "I won't keep you guys here any longer, and you can continue practicing at your own place. If you have any questions, you can contact me through Wang Shuren."

He then looked at Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao and said, "I will come to the Divine Nature Garden again in one month to see your progress with the exercise. If you aren't able to achieve my standards, you know what will happen, right?"

Luo Yixiao nodded with a serious expression on her face, "I won't disappoint the Master!"

"Good." He nodded and turned to look at Cai Yan before speaking, "I want you to continue practicing the flame controlling technique, and in one month, I will begin your training. If you show unsatisfactory results, I will also let you go. Do you understand?"

"Yes, Master!" Cai Yan said with a resolute expression.

Su Yang then brought Cai Yan, Senior Zeng, and Luo Yixiao back to their own home on the flying ship before returning to the Burning Lotus Sect.

"What are you going to do now?" Wang Shuren asked him.

"I am going to the Heavenly Swan Sect to see how Bai Lihua's doing," he said.

"I see... Then I'll see you again later."

"Wait. Before you go, I need a favor." Su Yang suddenly stopped her.

"You need a favor from me?" Wang Shuren raised her eyebrows in a pleasantly surprised manner.

He nodded and said, "I am going to consume the Hellfire Seed soon, and I need you to help me with gathering partners."

"You're going to consume the Hellfire Seed? That's reckless even for you!" Wang Shuren said with wide eyes.

"Don't worry, I have plenty of methods to keep it under my control."

"Then what do you mean by partners?" she then asked.

"Cultivation partners, of course. Once I consume the Hellfire Seed, my body will become uncontrollably l.u.s.tful and very energetic, and if I don't relieve that energy, my body will explode."

"You call something like that 'under your control'? And what about the disciple from the Profound Blossom Sect? You have plenty of partners there."

He shook his head and said, "They won't be enough."

"Then how many partners do you need? And what can I do to help?"

"I need at least a thousand partners, and you can help by recruiting them for me," he said.

"You want me to help you recruit partners? And a thousand of them?!" Wang Shuren's jaw dropped from shock, as she could have never imagined that such a day would come.

"Wouldn't it be easier if you did it yourself? I'm confident there is no lack of women out there who would willingly and gladly give their body to you if you asked." Wang Shuren said to him.

"Trust me, it works better when it's spread through the mouth of others instead of myself. It's not my first time doing this," he responded with a smile.

"And it's not as if I am asking you to travel around the world for this. I just need you to tell the disciples in the Burning Lotus Sect that I am currently looking for females who are willing to cultivate with me."

"Of course, I won't ask them to sacrifice their bodies for free. They'll also benefit from it."

"Are you going to pay them?" Wang Shuren raised her eyebrows in a doubtful manner.

"What? Of course not! If I am looking for p.r.o.s.t.i.t.u.t.es, I wouldn't need your help!" Su Yang sighed.

"Sorry... But what are you going to do?"

"After consuming the Hellfire Seed, my Yang Qi will be no different from a priceless treasure as it will contain powerful spiritual energy that will greatly benefit anyone who cultivates it."

"R-Really?" Wang Shuren looked at him with wide eyes. "Will it be able to benefit someone in the Earth Spirit Realm?"

He looked at her in the eyes and nodded, "Forget about the Earth Spirit Realm. My Yang Qi will greatly benefit even those in the Heavenly Spirit Realm!"

"What?! It's that potent?! You must let me cultivate with you then!" Wang Shuren quickly said.

"Don't worry, you will be one of the few to receive it first," he chuckled at her enthusiasm.

Chapter 622 - Telling Her the Truth

"Okay, so I understand what you want me to do for the most part. However, I still have a question." Wang Shuren said. "What kind of partners are you specifically looking for? Young ladies? Beautiful faces? Slim bodies? Mature women? Any requirements?"

"I am glad that you asked," he nodded his head before he continued to speak, "They must be at the sixth level Profound Spirit Realm at the very least, or my Yang Qi will be too potent for them to absorb."

"As for their appearance and body type, I am not picky when it comes to my partners, so I don't really care for that."

"Then when do you need their assistance? A week from now? A month from now?"

"Exactly one year from now," he said.

"I understand." Wang Shuren nodded her head.

"Then I will be leaving now." Su Yang said before flying away on the flying ship.

Once Su Yang left the Burning Lotus Sect, Wang Shuren rested for a few hours before looking for the Sect Master, Huo Yuanjia.

"What's the matter, Elder Wang?" Huo Yuanjia asked her after seeing her face.

She nodded and said, "I need you to summon all of the female disciples that are above the sixth level Profound Spirit Realm."

"Just the female disciples? Is there a particular reason why you need the female disciples?" Huo Yuanjia looked at her with raised eyebrows, clearly puzzled by her intentions.

"I just have a few words for them," she casually said.

"Well, I don't mind. When do you need them?" Huo Yuanjia nodded, as he couldn't possibly refuse her request no matter what her reasons were.

"In an hour at the resting area in the Outer Court."

"I will immediately notify the disciple."

"Thank you." Wang Shuren said.

"I should be thanking you for your service, Elder Wang. The Burning Lotus Sect is flourishing because of your pills and reputation." Huo Yuanjia said.

"Don't thank me for doing what's only natural." Wang Shuren said to him before calmly leaving the room.

Once Wang Shuren was gone, Huo Yuanjia retrieved a jade slip that could communicate with every disciple in the sect and cleared his throat before speaking to it with a clear voice, "All female disciples with a cultivation base of sixth level Profound Spirit Realm and above gather at the Resting Area in the Outer Sect within an hour. Elder Wang has something important to reveal."

An hour later, over 1,000 female disciples gathered in the meeting place, looking like a garden of flowers.

"What do you think we're doing here?" The disciples spoke with each other while they waited for Wang Shuren to make her appearance.

"Who knows. Maybe she's giving out pills again."

"By why would she need only female disciples?"

"Maybe it's a pill that only works for females?"

A few minutes later, Wang Shuren approached the place with a calm expression on her face.

"Disciple greets Elder Wang!"

"Greetings, Elder Wang!"

The disciples there immediately bowed to her respectfully after noticing her presence.

Wang Shuren nodded her head at them before standing on a higher platform and stared at the disciples below her with a serious gaze.

When the disciples saw this, they swallowed nervously.

"Ahem!"

After clearing her throat, Wang Shuren began to speak, "Thank you all for coming here on such short notice."

"Although this might sound weird to some of you, perhaps even outrageous, but I am here to make an announcement on behalf of Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect."

The disciples were dumbfounded after hearing Wang Shuren's words.

"Su Yang? The number one genius who reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm at 17 years old?"

"What kind of business would someone like him have with us?"

As the disciples mumbled to each other, Wang Shuren continued to speak, "Su Yang is currently looking for female cultivators who are willing to cultivate with him."

"Eh? Am I hearing things correctly? Su Yang is looking for partners to cultivate with?" The disciples looked at Wang Shuren with wide eyes filled with disbelief.

Wang Shuren nodded and continued, "If you are willing to cultivate with him, head to the Profound Blossom Sect exactly one year from now. However, you must be above the sixth level Profound Spirit Realm to participate. Furthermore, if you cultivate with him, your cultivation base will greatly benefit from his Yang Qi, as he will be consuming a valuable treasure that will turn it into a treasure."

"By Yang Qi, do you mean... his white stuff?" One of the disciples suddenly asked in a bashful manner.

"Yes, his s.p.e.r.m." Wang Shuren said without hesitation.

After a few minutes of uproar and conversations between the disciples, one of them asked, "Are there any other requirements? What about the type of women he's looking for?"

Hearing her question, Wang Shuren shook her head and said, "Su Yang said that he doesn't mind one's appearance or body figure as long as you are willing to cultivate with him."

The average-looking disciples there immediately brightened after hearing Wang Shuren's words.

Wang Shuren then proceeded to answer any questions the disciples may have for her.

Meanwhile, at the Heavenly Swan Sect, Su Yang knocked on Bai Lihua's door.

"Master, thank you for coming here," Bai Lihua opened the door a few moments later and greeted him.

"I see that you've recovered from the incident." Su Yang said to her in a teasing voice after he entered the house.

"...It's all thanks to your effort that I am even alive." Bai Lihua said with an embarrassed smile on her face.

"Anyway, before we start your lecture today, I have something important to tell you," said Su Yang as he entered her room.

"What is it, Master?" Bai Lihua looked at him with anticipation.

"Ahem..." After clearing his throat, Su Yang spoke, "I might have told you a small lie regarding my identity."

"A lie...?" Bai Lihua raised her eyebrows with an ominous feeling in her guts.

Su Yang reached for the mask on his face and removed it, revealing his face to her. However, unlike previously, his face was not disguised.

"..."

Bai Lihua's eyes widened slightly after seeing Su Yang's handsome face, but she did not say anything even after many moments had passed.

"I didn't think you would actually believe me when I said that I only looked like Su Yang so I rolled with it." Su Yang said with an awkward smile on his face.

"Haaa..." Bai Lihua closed her eyes and released a long sigh.

A few moments later, she spoke in a calm voice, "It's not that I believed you; it's more like I wanted to believe you. I already had a feeling that you were lying about your identity because of what Su Yin said on the day she first met you."

"Oh? Can you elaborate on that a little more?" Su Yang asked her with his interest intrigued.

"Only a true idiot would believe that you are not Su Yang even though your appearance had grown more mature, and I acted like an idiot because I did not want to admit to myself that I had fallen for you, Su Yang."

"..."

Su Yang was slightly surprised by her honesty, as he didn't expect Bai Lihua to tell him the truth about her feelings.

"I know I have said that I would never fall for someone like you, but alas..." Bai Lihua sighed.

Of course, Su Yang remained calm even after hearing her words, as this is not his first time hearing that sentence.

"Why did you decide to tell me about your real identity? It would've been better if you kept it a secret forever so that I won't feel as guilty for liking you." Bai Lihua suddenly asked him.

"You would've learned the truth sooner or later, so I figured that I might as well tell you now before you get too comfortable with my alias," he said.

"After all, it'll be much harder to accept the truth the longer I keep it hidden from you."

"I see..." Bai Lihua mumbled.

"Now that you know the truth, do you still want to learn Alchemy under me?" he asked her a moment later. "I won't blame you even if you decide to leave."

Bai Lihua silently stared at him for a good minute before speaking, "I am already too invested into alchemy to give up. And it does not matter who you are— as long as you can teach me alchemy, I won't have any reason to leave."

"Unless you are going to tell me that you've also faked your skills in alchemy next?" Bai Lihua looked at him with narrowed eyes.

"Hahaha... If I didn't have any real ability, why would I even accept disciples? Just to let the world eventually find out that I am a fake Alchemist?" Su Yang spoke as he laughed.

"Don't worry, my skills are the real deal. If you study under me, I can guarantee you that you'll become one of the best Alchemists in this world."

Bai Lihua nodded and said, "Once again, please take care of me, Master."

"You can call me Su Yang when we are alone," he said to her. "I want you to be comfortable around me."

"It's already too late for that, Su Yang." Bai Lihua said with a bittersweet smile.

"Don't worry, that will go away once we start being around each other more," he showed her a confident smile on his handsome face.

"..."

"By the way, can you continue using your other appearance even though I already know your real identity? I would rather be lectured by someone older than me even if it's just the appearance," she asked him sometime later.

"Whatever makes you comfortable," he nodded before changing his appearance with an Appearance Reforming Pill.

Chapter 623 - Lecturing Bai Lihua

After consuming an Appearance Reforming Pill and changing his face to the mature Su Yang, he said to Bai Lihua, "Now that you have recovered, and since you have already learned how to concoct pills by yourself, I am going to skip the basics and focus on your alchemy skills. Therefore, I am going to watch you concoct pills and see what you need to improve on."

"Once you have reached an acceptable level in pill concocting, I will begin teaching you the more advanced techniques."

"I understand." Bai Lihua nodded.

Sometime later, Bai Lihua brought Su Yang to another building that was recently renovated just so she could concoct pills there without bothering the other disciples and vice versa.

After the preparations, Bai Lihua sat before the cauldron and began concocting an Elementary-grade pill, the Minor Spirit Refreshment Pill.

"..."

Su Yang stared at Bai Lihua with a sharp gaze and watched her every movement while she concocted the pills, even remaining silent when he spotted mistakes.

One hour... two hours... three hours...

Eight long hours have passed since Bai Lihua began concocting the Elementary-grade pill yet she showed no signs of finishing the pill any time soon. Of course, this did not mean Bai Lihua had no talent in alchemy. In fact, it was quite the opposite, as the average Alchemists in this world usually require over 12 hours to concoct the lowest grade pills with some even taking an entire day.

After another hour of effort, Bai Lihua finally retrieved her alchemy flames and opened the cauldron a moment later, taking out a grey colored pill from within.

"What do you think, Su Yang?" she asked him with a slightly proud expression on her face.

However, Su Yang merely glanced at the pill before speaking in a nonchalant voice, "How can you act so proud after producing that rubbish?"

"R-Rubbish?!" Bai Lihua's eyes widened with shock, as she didn't expect him to respond in such a rude manner.

"If that is not rubbish, I don't know what is. Even a starving dog wouldn't even dare to eat that pill if you fed it." Su Yang said.

"You don't have to be so rude..." she said with a frown.

"Rude? I am merely telling you the truth. A pill that cannot be consumed is no different from trash that cannot be recycled. If that is not rubbish then what is?" Su Yang shook his head before continuing, "I am here to lecture you, not to praise your failures. If you want positive feedback, you should make something worthy of praises."

"..."

Although Bai Lihua disliked his attitude, she could not refute his words.

'You're even stricter than me when it comes to lecturing our disciples,' she sighed inwardly.

"Anyway, you can toss that trash to the side. I am now going to tell you everything you did wrong or could have done better so listen up."

Su Yang proceeded to explain to her every mistake she made from the moment she sat down till the moment she retrieved the pill from the cauldron. Once Bai Lihua realized her mistakes, Su Yang began telling her how she can improve or fix her mistakes.

Many minutes later, Su Yang said to her, "Go ahead and concoct another Minor Spirit Refreshment Pill."

Bai Lihua nodded with a serious expression before facing the cauldron once again.

"..."

"..."

"..."

Seven hours later, Bai Lihua stared at the white pill in her hands with a bewildered expression on her face. Not only did it take less time for her to concoct this pill but it was also much easier. Furthermore, compared to the low-quality pill she concocted previously, this pill was near the medium-quality.

'How is this possible? I only followed Su Yang's instructions, even screwing up a few times during the process, yet the pill still came out almost medium-quality?' Bai Lihua doubted her own eyes, as her improvements were simply too fast, even jaw-dropping.

She looked at Su Yang, who was calmly standing there with a casual expression.

"If you continue to listen to my lectures, you'll only improve faster," he said after seeing the expression on her face.

Bai Lihua nodded in a dazed manner.

"Get some rest. We'll continue tomorrow morning after you've freshened up."

When she saw that Su Yang was leaving, Bai Lihua quickly shouted, "Wait!"

"What's the matter?" he turned around and asked.

"..."

After a moment of silence, she asked him with a serious expression, "Are you... are you not going to respond to my feelings?"

Hearing her question, Su Yang showed a slight smile on his face and said, "I will give you an answer once you've improved enough."

"W-What?! That's not fair!" she quickly said.

However, Su Yang did not respond and left the room shortly later, leaving Bai Lihua speechless.

'Is he really going to leave me hanging?! I don't even know why I like him!' Bai Lihua sighed inwardly before cleaning herself and going to bed, instantly falling asleep due to her exhaustion.

The following morning, Su Yang appeared before her again.

"I am now going to tell you your mistakes from yesterday." Su Yang wasted no time beginning the lecture.

Once the lecture ended, Bai Lihua began concocting the Minor Spirit Refreshment Pill.

"..."

"..."

"..."

Six hours later, Bai Lihua opened the lid to the cauldron and retrieved the pill from inside.

"A medium-quality pill! I have successfully concocted a medium-quality pill!" Bai Lihua was ecstatic at this moment. To think she would be able to concoct medium-quality pills after just spending a single day with Su Yang. What will happen if she received lectures from him for an entire year? What kind of progress would she make?

"What are you, a child? Don't be too quick to celebrate. It's only medium-quality, not to mention the pill itself is only Elementary-grade." Su Yang shook his head at her.

"You're right. I shouldn't be too happy about this." Bai Lihua did not refute his words, even agreeing with him.

She then stared at him in silence, clearly waiting for his lectures to begin.

"Although your techniques have improved compared to yesterday, there were still many mistakes in your flame control and other things." Su Yang said before giving her more pointers.

Sometime later, Bai Lihua began concocting pills again.

The two of them would continue this routine for the next few days until Bai Lihua could concoct high-quality Minor Spirit Refreshment Pills consistently.

"I didn't think I would ever become an Alchemist, much less concoct high-quality pills, as it has never even crossed my mind before," she spoke with a profound gaze as she stared at the white pill sitting on her palm. Compared to just a few days ago, the results were like night and day.

"Now that I can concoct Elementary-grade pills with great results constantly, do I move onto Profound-grade pills now?" she asked him a few moments later.

"You think you'd mastered Elementary-grade pills just because you can concoct the same pill over and over again with good results? You can start working on Profound-grade pills once you can concoct over ten different types of Elementary-grade pills with similar results."

"Ten different pill recipes? Where am I going to get such recipes? I only have one recipe on me, the Minor Spirit Refreshment Pill, and they don't sell pill recipes just anywhere." Bai Lihua said to him.

"Who do you think you are talking to?"

Su Yang suddenly waved his sleeves, causing over one hundred small scrolls to pile on the floor.

"T-These are..." Bai Lihua looked at the pile before her and swallowed nervously.

"They are all pill recipes for Elementary-grade pills. I want you to be able to concoct at least half of these consistently at the high-quality."

"Half?!" Bai Lihua's jaw dropped upon hearing his words. How long would that take? Months? Years?

"You are underestimating your talents, Bai Lihua." Su Yang suddenly said to her.

"W-What do you mean by that?"

"Not everybody can learn to concoct pills by themselves and be able to concoct high-quality pills only a week later. Although I am helping you, your recent improvements are mostly due to your own talents."

"Su Yang..." Bai Lihua could feel her face heating up facing his intensive stares. This is her first time getting his compliments after many days of straight insults and strictness from him.

"If it's you, you will be able to master these pills in no time." Su Yang said in a reassuring voice.

After a moment of silence, Bai Lihua looked at him with a resolute expression and said, "If I master all of these pill recipes, will you give me an answer?"

"I will," he nodded.

"It's a promise then."

"I will also come by here once a week to see your progress. If you need anything, you know where to find me."

"Thank you, Su Yang..." she said with a gentle smile on her face.

"Don't even mention it."

"Then if you need anything from me, just let me know."

"A favor, huh? I actually have one," he suddenly said.

"What do you need from me?"

"Well, it's like this..."

Su Yang proceeded to explain his situation with the Hellfire Seeds to her and how he needed partners for the aftermath, dumbfounding Bai Lihua who definitely did not expect this kind of favor, even regretting giving him such an offer in the first place.

"Let me get this right. You want me, the Sect Master, to help you recruit cultivation partners within my own sect?" Bai Lihua asked him afterward.

"That's right." Su Yang nodded with a straight face, leaving her speechless.

Chapter 624 - Cannot Wait to Cultivate

"You...You are truly the most shameless person I have ever come across..." Bai Lihua said to him with a speechless face.

"If I wasn't shameless, I wouldn't be a successful Dual Cultivator," he chuckled at her words.

"I can't believe you are really asking me to do this..." Bai Lihua rubbed her temples while sighing.

"If it's too much for you, you can just ignore it. After all, I am only asking you for a favor," he said to her with a calm expression.

"..."

After a moment of silence, she said, "While it may be quite a ridiculous favor that you're asking, I still need to thank you for helping me for the last few days, so I will help you out with this recruitment."

"Thank you," said Su Yang.

"You should leave before I change my mind," she quickly said to him.

Su Yang nodded and flew away on the flying ship.

"Haaa..."

Bai Lihua released a long sigh afterward, mumbling to herself in a low voice, "How can you ask me to help you look for women to sleep with when you still haven't answered my feelings? Why didn't you ask me to help you instead?"

After standing there for a few minutes with a dazed expression on her pretty face, Bai Lihua summoned every disciple above the sixth level Profound Spirit Realm within the sect, and because the Heavenly Swan Sect only consisted of female disciples, more than a third of the entire sect gathered before Bai Lihua sometime later.

Bai Lihua looked at the thousands of disciples standing before her with a perplexed face, thinking to herself that her reputation would definitely take a hit for what she's about to do.

Most of the disciples within the Heavenly Swan Sect were innocent maidens that have never had a relationship with a man before, much less have s.e.x, so the odds of them giving their first time to a stranger they have never met before was slim to none.

"Thank you all for gathering here. I have a special announcement for all of you today, and I would normally never say something like this, but I owe this person a great favor, so I will be announcing this on his behalf."

After taking a deep breath, she began speaking in an awkward and stiff voice, "Due to circumstances, Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect and Heavenly Spirit Realm expert, Su Yang, is currently looking for female partners above the sixth level Profound Spirit Realm to cultivate with."

"What did you just say?!"

A shocked cry resounded immediately after Bai Lihua ended her sentence, causing the people there to turn their head and look at her.

"Su Yin..." Bai Lihua showed a bitter smile after seeing her face.

"Did Elder Brother really say that?!" she asked him a moment later.

Bai Lihua nodded and said, "Su Yang will be consuming a very powerful treasure, and he will need many partners to relieve himself afterward, hence why he's looking for partners. He also said that if you cultivate with him, your cultivation base will improve because of the energy from the treasure."

"Do you have any questions?" she asked them afterward.

"Sect Master, what do you mean by cultivating with him?" One innocent young lady asked.

"..."

Bai Lihua cleared her throat before responding with her face slightly red, "It means you are going to have s.e.x with him."

"Have s.e.x?!"

The innocent disciples there immediately went into an uproar. None of them could have ever imagined that their sect master would ask them to have s.e.x with a man out of her own will, especially when she usually expresses the opposite sentiment!

And the disciples began mumbling to each other.

"Su Yang... he is the handsome young man at the Regional Tournament, right?"

"Yes, and he's known as the number one genius."

"I have actually been thinking about him ever since I witnessed his prowess at the Regional Tournament. I didn't think that I would be able to embrace someone like him!"

One of the disciples suddenly raised her hand and asked Bai Lihua, "Sect Master, what else do we get out of cultivating with Su Yang?"

"I don't know, as he'd only mentioned about improving one's cultivation base with his Yang Qi," she responded.

"Do you think he'll let us conceive his child if we helped him?" Another disciple suddenly asked, shocking Bai Lihua with such an absurd question.

"Y-You'll have to ask Su Yang that..." she said after a moment of silence.

"It would be nice if he allowed us to conceive his child. After all, his children will definitely be talented," said another disciple.

In the cultivation world, female Cultivators usually choose their partner with the men's talent in mind before their appearance, as they would rather have a talented child that might achieve great things in their life than a good-looking child who has only mediocre talent or simply no talent at all.

"Now everyone and their mother will have a taste of my beloved Elder Brother..." Su Yin sighed loudly.

When Bai Lihua noticed that there were a lot of disciples who appeared excited after hearing her announcement, she began doubting herself.

'Perhaps Su Yang is actually more popular with the females than I'd initially thought?' she pondered inwardly as half of the female disciples there chatted with each other with blissful and anticipated expressions on their faces.

"Sect Master, when does Su Yang need us to cultivate with him?" One of the disciples there suddenly asked her.

"He said it'll mostly depend on his situation, but it should happen one year from now if not sooner..." she quickly responded.

"One year from now, huh? I cannot wait to have s.e.x with Su Yang! Hopefully, he'll let me bear his child, too!" One of the disciples said with a vulgar expression on her face, dumbfounding Bai Lihua who had no idea that her disciples were actually this perverted all along, even feeling a little bit dispirited by the unexpected outcome.

Chapter 625 - Leaving It to Fate

After returning to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang continued his daily routine of training the Profound Blossom Sect disciples and lecturing Bai Lihua and Wang Shuren once a week.

A few weeks later, Liu Lanzhi knocked on his door and said to him, "We have received an official letter from the Xie Family, inviting the Sect Masters and three disciples to their household for dinner and our rewards from the Regional Tournament."

"About time," said Su Yang with a calm expression. "When do we have to arrive?"

"The letter did not give us an exact date, only telling us to go whenever we feel that we are ready," she replied while looking at the letter.

"So they're telling us to go as soon as possible, huh."

"When do you want to go?" he asked her a moment later.

"I can leave within an hour," she quickly said.

"Then we shall leave in an hour," he nodded.

"What about the three disciples that we are supposed to bring? This is mostly for the Celestial Pond, but we still haven't decided on who we should pick." Liu Lanzhi said.

"Hmmm... then we can simply decide now. Summon all of the disciples in the sect."

"Okay." Liu Lanzhi then pulled out her jade slip and spoke to every disciple in the sect, "I want every disciple to stop whatever you are doing now and head to the gathering area as soon as possible. The Sect Masters have an important matter to discuss with all of you."

Fifteen minutes later, Su Yang and Liu Lanzhi stood before a thousand disciples in the gathering area—both new and old.

"Ahem. This is regarding one of the rewards from our victory in the Regional Tournament—the Celestial Pond." Liu Lanzhi said to them.

"The Celestial Pond is a mythical cultivation spot that can improve one's cultivation speed by 100 times if they cultivated there, and we have been given the privilege by the Xie Family to send three disciples to train in that place for seven days, meaning your cultivation will improve as though you'd cultivated for two years, or 700 days to be exact."

The disciples expressed shock and excitement upon learning about the Celestial Pond, as it was essentially giving them two years of time for free! A peerless treasure and a massive opportunity for any Cultivator!

"However, as you'd heard, we are allowed to bring only three disciples with us, and that is the reason we have gathered all of you here today, as we will be deciding here and now which three disciples we will bring with us."

Liu Lanzhi then continued, "Before we start, if you do not wish to cultivate in the Celestial Pond, please step aside now."

The disciples looked at each other. Who in their right mind would give away this once-in-a-lifetime opportunity willingly and without anything in return?!

A few moments later, all of the Legacy Disciples and Sect Elders began walking out of the crowd and stood at the side, dumbfounding the new disciples.

"Who needs the Celestial Pond when we already have Su Yang? His Yang Qi definitely won't lose to some Celestial Pond." One of the Legacy Disciple mumbled in a low voice that was heard by many people there.

Indeed, Su Yang was able to help them reach the True Spirit Realm from the Elementary Spirit Realm in less than a year, which usually requires many years of effort. Although his Yang Qi might not be as effective as the Celestial Pond, they are able to absorb his Yang Qi on a daily basis while the Celestial Pond can only be used once every 100 years.

A few moments later, more disciples could be seen walking to the side, and they were the Junior Disciples.

"There's no point for us to go there since we cannot cultivate until we are mature," said one of the Junior Disciples.

"Is there anyone else who does not wish to go?" Liu Lanzhi asked them later.

When no more disciples stepped out of the crowd even after waiting for a few moments, Liu Lanzhi said, "Then I will let Sect Master Su take things from here."

Once Liu Lanzhi stepped back, Su Yang stepped forward and said to the disciples, "Because we don't have much time, I will make this process quick and simple."

"I have hidden three ordinary rocks with my name written on it around the sect, and the first three to find it will be allowed to cultivate in the Celestial Pond."

"..."

The entire place was dead silent, as they were dumbfounded speechless by his eccentric method.

Seeing the funny expressions on the disciples' faces, Su Yang continued to speak in a calm voice, "Do you believe in the existence of fate? Some people believe that no matter what you decide to do in your life, there will be events in your life that have already been predetermined by fate and cannot be avoided no matter what you do. Therefore, let's see which of you are fated to find the rock and cultivate in the Celestial Pond."

"And because I don't want this to take all day, I have limited the places where I can hide the rock. Firstly, it will not be in any living quarters or any building that cannot be accessed without special permission.

Second, all three rocks are hidden within the Outer Court so you don't have to search the entire sect. And finally, it will not be in places where you cannot reach without the assistance of techniques or treasures."

After explaining the rules to the disciple, Su Yang said to them with a smile on his face, "You all have exactly two hours to bring me the rocks. If nobody can find it by then, I will simply act as though none of you were fated to cultivate in the Celestial Pond. And in the case less than three people find the rocks, I will only bring the ones who found the rocks. Good luck. Your time starts now."

Chapter 626 - Do You Think the Sect Master Is Only Playing With Us?

Immediately after Su Yang ended his sentence, the disciples started running around the entire Outer Court in search of the three rocks hidden by Su Yang that could potentially change their life forever.

"I cannot believe you would use this kind of method to pick whoever gets to cultivate in the Celestial Pond. I will never get used to being shocked by you at this rate." Liu Lanzhi said with a bittersweet smile on her face.

"Life is not always about choices, as there are moments where you can only rely on fate," Su Yang responded with a calm expression.

"Anyway, you have two hours to get ready for our journey to the Xie Family. I will stay here." Su Yang then said to her.

"Un. I will leave it to you," she nodded before leaving him alone.

Once Liu Lanzhi was gone, Su Yang sat down and began to cultivate in silence. Meanwhile, the disciples that refused to participate returned to their own business, allowing the other disciples more room to run around.

The cafeteria, the library, any open areas, in-between the cracks on the floor— the disciples searched every nook and cranny their eyes gazed upon in the Outer Court. However, even after 30 minutes of searching, none of the disciples have returned to Su Yang with the rock in their hands.

The disciples even began to wonder if Su Yang really hid the rocks in the first place.

"Do you think the Sect Master is only playing with us, and he doesn't want anybody to cultivate in the Celestial Pond?" One of the disciples asked the others.

"Why would he do that? That makes no sense," said another disciple.

"Yes, but the Sect Master's entire existence doesn't make sense, so..."

While the group of disciples was chatting with each other, someone suddenly shouted in an excited voice, "I found it! I found one!"

"What?!"

The disciples around this person immediately turned their heads to look at the lucky disciple who'd managed to find the first rock.

"Where did you find it, Junior Sister Chen?" The disciples quickly surrounded her and bombarded her with questions.

"How could you possibly find it here? I had searched through this spot over a dozen times and I didn't find anything!" One of the disciples exclaimed, voicing his doubts.

"It's true! It was right here!" Disciple Chen said as she pointed at the floor right beside her.

"..."

The other disciples looked at her with frowns on their faces.

"Are you making fun of us, Junior Sister? If the rock was laying out in the open on the floor, why didn't the other disciples see it when they searched this place before you? Even someone visually impaired wouldn't miss it!"

"That's right! I walked through this exact spot just a minute ago and I didn't see the rock on the floor!"

Faced with so many doubtful gazes, the female disciple could only show a puzzled expression on her face, as she had no reason to lie to them.

"I am not lying! I really found it here! If you don't believe me, then don't! I am going to the Sect Master right now!" Disciple Chen said before she pushed the crowd away and ran to Su Yang.

The other disciples decided to follow her to see whether she really found the real rock or was only faking it.

"Sect Master! I found one of the rocks!" Disciple Chen ran up to him with her hand waving in the air.

Hearing her voice, Su Yang opened his eyes to see a cute young lady standing before him with an ordinary-looking rock on her palms.

Su Yang took the rock off her hands and looked at the word 'Su' engraved onto it.

"Where did you find this?" he asked her with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Right outside the Cafeteria, Sect Master..." she said with a nervous face, as she was worried that he might not believe her because of what the other disciples had said to her.

"I see... Okay, you pass." Su Yang said to her a moment later, dumbfounded her and the other disciples.

"W-What is going on, Sect Master?! How come we didn't see any rock at where she found it when we searched?! This doesn't make any sense!" One of the disciples there decided to ask him.

"Like I'd said from the beginning. Your fate will determine whether you are destined to find the rock or not. I don't know how else to explain it to you." Su Yang shrugged his shoulders, leaving the disciples speechless.

However, it was not as though they could argue with him, the Sect Master. Thus, they swallowed their anger and returned to looking for the remaining two rocks.

"Are you curious, or should I say puzzled why only you'd found the rock when the others couldn't?" Su Yang asked her after the other disciples left.

"Yes, Sect Master," she quickly nodded her head in response.

"The rock was in plain sight when I found it, but the other disciples did not believe me," she explained to him.

"That's because I had hidden the rocks inside a concealment formation that would reveal itself at random times for only a brief moment, and you'd happened to see it when that happened. Like I'd said, it was pure coincidence that you found it... It was fate." Su Yang explained to her with a smile on his face.

"A concealment formation? No wonder why the other disciples didn't see it..." Disciple Chen sighed in relief after realizing the truth.

"Anyway, you have a little over an hour to prepare for the journey," Su Yang said to her a moment later. "Come back here once you're done with your preparations."

"Yes, Sect Master!" The disciple bowed to him before running back to her home to prepare for the journey.

Once Disciple Chen left the scene, Su Yang closed his eyes again and returned to cultivating in silence.

Meanwhile, the other disciples continued to search for the rocks like rats squeezing into every nook and cranny in search of food.

Chapter 627 - Visiting the Xie Family

An entire hour has passed since Su Yang made the disciples run around the sect looking for rocks that were hidden inside concealment formations that could only be found by chance.

"Sect Master, I have found one of the rocks!" Another disciple approached him a few minutes after the hour mark.

"Let me see the rock," said Su Yang as he looked at the young lady with a graceful appearance before him.

The disciple nodded and handed him the rock.

Once he saw his name on the rock, he nodded and said, "You have an hour to prepare for the journey. Come back here afterward."

"Yes, Sect Master!" The disciple nodded before leaving the scene.

"One left, huh..." Su Yang mumbled to himself before closing his eyes again, silently waiting for the last disciple to appear.

However, nobody else approached him even after 30 minutes of waiting.

"How is the search going? How many disciples have found the rocks?" Liu Lanzhi asked him after returning to his side sometime later.

"Two," he calmly responded.

"Only two? And how much time do they have left?"

"A little less than ten minutes," he said.

After a moment of silence, Liu Lanzhi asked him, "Are you really going to bring only those who found the rock to the Xie Family? It would be a waste to not use all three spots."

"Don't worry, there won't be any empty spots even if the last rock is not found," he said to her with a calm face.

"Who do you plan on bringing?" she asked him with interest.

"Someone who could take full advantage of the Celestial Pond," he casually responded.

"What? If there's someone like that, why are you doing this?" Now Liu Lanzhi was puzzled by his actions.

"Although it will greatly benefit her, she doesn't really need it, and it'll be like feeding a fat pig with even more food."

'I still don't get it...' Liu Lanzhi shook her head inwardly.

Ten minutes passed in the blink of an eye, and nobody else approached Su Yang with the last rock during this time.

"All of you can stop searching for the last rock now," Su Yang took out a communication jade slip and said to the disciples. "Two hours have passed, and it seems that only two of you were destined to cultivate in the Celestial Pond. It's unfortunate, but the cultivation world requires more luck than you think."

When the disciples that did not find the rocks heard Su Yang's words, they all sighed with dispirited expressions on their faces before returning home with a defeated feeling surrounding them.

Meanwhile, the two female disciples that found the rock returned to Su Yang's side with blissful expressions on their faces.

'They're both female disciples?' Liu Lanzhi raised her eyebrows after seeing these two beauties, and she wondered if Su Yang had purposefully rigged the event just so these two could cultivate in the Celestial Pond. However, after thinking about Su Yang's character, it was unlikely that he would do something like this, so Liu Lanzhi decided to think of it as pure coincidence.

"Are the two of you ready to leave?" Su Yang asked the two disciples.

"Yes, Sect Master!" They both nodded.

The disciple with the cute and pretty face belonged to the dual cultivation division whilst the other disciple with the graceful atmosphere belonged to the normal cultivation division.

"Then let's head to the Xie Family." Su Yang then tossed the flying boat into the air and jumped onto it.

"What are you waiting for? Get on the boat," he said to them when they remained standing there with dumbfounded expressions on their faces, as this is their first time riding on a flying treasure.

A few moments later, once they were on the flying boat, Su Yang said to them, "Hang on to me."

The disciples nodded their heads and grabbed his robes whilst Liu Lanzhi directly embraced him with one of her arms.

Once they were prepared, Su Yang commanded the flying boat to soar towards Snowfall City.

"Ahhhhhhhh!"

The disciples screamed at the top of their lungs when they experienced the flying boat's ridiculous speed, their expressions filled with fear, and they immediately went to tightly embrace Su Yang's body.

As for Liu Lanzhi, although she didn't scream like the disciples, she also embraced Su Yang with all of her strength, fearing that she might accidentally fall from the flying boat.

A few horrifying minutes later, the flying boat stopped moving once they reached the Xie Family's household.

"You can let go now," Su Yang said to the three ladies that did not realize they had reached their destination and continued embracing him like three koalas on a tree.

"W-We're here already?" Liu Lanzhi looked beneath them with wide eyes filled with shock.

"Yes, so you can stop squeezing me to death now," he said with a smile on his face.

"O-Oh... I'm sorry..." Liu Lanzhi quickly released her death grip on him.

The disciples also apologized to him afterward.

"Let's descend," he said to them sometime later.

Meanwhile, inside the Xie Family's household, Lord Xie was silently cultivating inside his room when a loud voice resounded in the room, startling him awake.

"Wake up! Su Yang is here!" Xie Wang's voice boomed.

"F-Father?! What do you mean he's already here? We sent the letter not long ago!" Lord Xie shouted in an annoyed voice.

"Did I stutter or something? Hurry up and greet them! I will be there shortly!" Xie Wang's voice resounded again, sounding even more annoyed than Lord Xie.

"Y-Yes, Father..." Hearing his father's angry voice, Lord Xie had no choice but to stop his cultivation to greet Su Yang.

Sometime later, Lord Xie opened the front door to see Liu Lanzhi and two other young ladies with her. However, Su Yang was not there with them.

"Where's Su Yang?" he asked them.

"Liu Lanzhi greets His Majesty!" she hastily bowed to him, as she did not expect him to appear so suddenly.

"Su Yang had to return to the sect to bring our third disciple here and should return here shortly," she then said to him.

Chapter 628 Xie Family's Apology

"I see... Anyway, come inside." Lord Xie opened the door wide and welcomed them inside with a warm smile on his face.

"Thank you, Your Majesty..."

"Please, just call me Senior Xie when you are here. I was the one who invited you here for dinner, after all." Lord Xie said to them.

"..."

Liu Lanzhi and the disciples were speechless, as they would've never imagined that the day would come where they could address the ruler of the Eastern Continent so casually! It was truly a dream-like miracle!

Sometime later, as Lord Xie led them into the building, Xie Xingfang could be seen running towards them from the end of the hall with an excited expression on her face.

"Welcome to our humble home, Su—"

However, the excitement on her face instantly disappeared when she didn't see Su Yang amongst them.

"Where's Su Yang? Did he not come here with you?" she asked them with a slightly dazed face.

"Greetings, Your Highness. Su Yang came here with us, but he had to return to the Profound Blossom Sect to pick up the last member..." Liu Lanzhi bowed to her.

"You can just call me Xing'er like everyone else in this place, Senior Liu."

"I don't dare..." Liu Lanzhi quickly shook her head.

"It's fine, really. In fact, I still haven't expressed my gratitude to you for the hospitality at the Profound Blossom Sect." Xie Xingfang then gracefully bowed towards her and spoke in a clear tone, "Thank you, for letting my grandfather and I stay at the Profound Blossom Sect. It was a lifesaver... literally."

"You are exaggerating..." Liu Lanzhi showed a humble yet stiff smile on her face, as it simply felt very weird for the Xie Family to be treating her as though they were friends when they've barely interacted with each other.

"Father, allow me to show the guests their room." Xie Xingfang said to him.

"Go ahead. I will have the servants prepare some tea for you." He nodded before walking away.

"Come with me," Xie Xingfang said to the three of them afterward.

Sometime later, they entered a luxurious room that was filled with so many shiny decorations that it'd briefly blinded their vision.

"Um... Your Highness, although this is not even close to being enough to fully express my gratitude to the Xie Family for inviting us over, I hope you may find some use for it..." Liu Lanzhi suddenly retrieved a storage pouch from her storage ring and offered it to Xie Xingfang.

However, Xie Xingfang merely stared at the storage pouch with a silent gaze.

A few seconds later, she shook her head and spoke, "I cannot accept that, Senior Liu."

"Eh? Why not?" Liu Lanzhi looked at her with wide eyes. Even if they didn't need it, one would normally accept the gift as a gesture of respect and acceptance.

"Because I also have a small gift for you." Xie Xingfang also retrieved a storage pouch from her robes and showed it to Liu Lanzhi.

"The Xie Family hasn't done anything worthy of your gift. In fact, we have been doing the opposite by causing trouble for the Profound Blossom Sect constantly..." Xie Xingfang suddenly lowered her head and apologized to her, "On behalf of the Xie Family, I am sorry for everything that has happened. If only we were more involved with the outside world, perhaps the Million Snakes Sect would've never bothered you..."

"Please, raise your head, Your Highness!" Liu Lanzhi panicked when Xie Xingfang lowered her head, as her actions were akin to lowering her own status. Luckily for them, they were inside a private room and only two other people saw it. If Xie Xingfang had lowered her head in public, it would've definitely caused a commotion.

"You cannot blame yourself for what happened between the Profound Blossom Sect and the Million Snakes Sect, as they are the ones who are at fault!" Liu Lanzhi then said to her.

"No, it is exactly because my family had nothing to do with the Million Snakes Sect that allowed them to go on a rampage. We should've intervened when we first heard about it, but we did not do anything, giving them the impression that we approve of their actions," said Xie Xingfang.

And she continued, "Although this offering will not bring back the disciples who left the sect or change what had happened and erase the pain you'd felt, I hope that you could accept it, or I will not be able to sleep peacefully again."

"..."

Liu Lanzhi was rendered speechless by Xie Xingfang's genuine sincerity.

A few moments later, Liu Lanzhi eventually nodded her head and accepted Xie Xingfang's storage pouch.

"Thank you very much, Your Highness." Liu Lanzhi bowed to her afterward.

"No, I should be the one thanking you, Senior Liu, so... Thank you." Xie Xingfang responded with her own bow. "And please call me Xing'er."

"..."

Meanwhile, the two disciples in the same room felt extremely out of place, almost like two beggars who'd accidentally walked into a fancy meeting.

"Anyway, you ladies can use this room as you please while we wait for Su Yang to return," Xie Xingfang said to them sometime later. "The tea should also be here soon."

"Thank you, Your... Xing'er..." Liu Lanzhi said in a stiff voice.

"You'll get used to it," Xie Xingfang smiled at her before leaving the room shortly later.

"Haaa... that was nerve-wracking..." Liu Lanzhi sat on the large couch behind her with an exhausted face, completely ignoring the two disciples in the room.

"Are you okay, Sect Master?" Disciple Chen asked her a moment later.

"Yes, it's just that I have never spoken with the Xie Family for so long at once. Hell, this is my first time actually speaking with them so casually! It just feels so weird!" she sighed.

The disciples silently nodded their heads, and they understood her feelings even though they didn't have to speak with the Xie Family.

'Su Yang, please come back soon... I don't think I will be able to handle the Xie Family by myself!' Liu Lanzhi cried inwardly.

Chapter 629 The Most Talented Disciple in the Profound Blossom Sect

After dropping Liu Lanzhi and the disciples off at the Xie Family's front door, Su Yang returned to the Profound Blossom Sect to look for a certain disciple.

Once he descended from the sky and landed in front of a building that was not too far away from the Yin Yang Pavilion, he knocked on the door.

A few moments later, the door opened, and a cute little girl appeared before him.

"Master." Yan Yan greeted him with a bow.

"How have you been doing with your cultivation, Yan Yan?" he asked her with a friendly smile.

"Very good, Master. I reached the seventh level Earth Spirit Realm just yesterday, and my understanding of the cultivation technique is also improving every day."

"That's good to hear. Anyway, I am here for one thing." Su Yang then looked at her with a serious gaze and spoke, "I want you to cultivate in the Celestial Pond. With your divine body, you'll definitely breakthrough to the Heavenly Spirit Realm by the time you come out in seven days."

"Celestial Pond?" Yan Yan looked at him with a puzzled face.

"Oh, right. You weren't there when I explained it. The Celestial Pond is a treasure that will improve your cultivation speed by 100 times if you cultivate inside, and you can only do so once every 100 years. It's not something you can do every day."

"Master wants me to cultivate there?" she asked him.

"That's right. It'll only be for seven days, and I'll be there with you."

"Okay." Seeing no reason to refuse, Yan Yan nodded her head.

"Good. Come with me."

Su Yang then carried Yan Yan onto the flying boat and flew back to Snowfall City.

"!!!"

Just like most people during their first ride on the flying boat, Yan Yan feared for her life and immediately hugged Su Yang with her entire body.

A few minutes later, they arrived at the Xie Family's household.

"Welcome to our home, Su Yang." Xie Wang said to him before he could even leave the flying boat.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Are the others inside?"

"Yes. They are all waiting for you inside."

Xie Wang then noticed the little hugging Su Yang's legs.

His eyes widened when he realized that she was at the seventh level Earth Spirit Realm.

"Is this young girl the genius with that divine body that only recently joined the Profound Blossom Sect? I thought she was only at the fifth level Earth Spirit Realm..." Xie Wang asked Su Yang.

"Yes, she was." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Then you are telling me that she actually managed to raise two whole levels in just a few weeks? What kind of monstrous talent does she have?" Xie Wang spoke with an envious gaze.

If the Xie Family had a genius like her, their power would immensely increase.

"Master is a good teacher." Yan Yan said to Xie Wang with a calm face.

"Hoh? You can look at me in the eyes without trembling? That too is quite rare, especially since you are still so young," Xie Wang nodded with approval. Because of his Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base, he would naturally emit a suppressing aura, and it was not something people with a weak mind or low cultivation can withstand, hence why he rarely appears in public.

"Anyway, let's continue our conversation inside with some tea. It's the Xie Family's turn to show you our hospitality." Xie Wang said to them before leading them inside and where Liu Lanzhi and the others were waiting.

"Su Yang! You are finally here!" Liu Lanzhi nearly burst out crying after seeing his face, as she was at her limit from dealing with the Xie Family.

"Su Yang, welcome to our humble home again." Xie Xingfang placed her tea down and stood up to bow to him elegantly.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Thank you for having us."

Sometime later, once they were all settled down with some tea in their hands, Xie Xingfang said while looking at Yan Yan with wide eyes, "She's already at the seventh level Earth Spirit Realm? If I recall correctly, she was only at the fifth level during the entrance exam not long ago..."

"Yes, she's quite the talented one, after all." Su Yang said with a smile.

"So you were thinking about Disciple Yan this entire time, huh..." Liu Lanzhi finally understood Su Yang's words from before. Yan Yan is, without doubt, the most talented disciple in Profound Blossom Sect's

history, not including Su Yang, as he was basically cheating with his Immortal background. If anyone should cultivate in the Celestial Pond, it should be Yan Yan.

"Do you plan on making her cultivate in the Celestial Pond? I cannot imagine how much her cultivation will grow afterward..." Xie Xingfang spoke in a slightly nervous tone.

If Yan Yan could already cultivate 100 times faster than even the top geniuses of this world, what will happen once she cultivates in the Celestial Pond? It would not shock them at all even if she enters the Heavenly Spirit Realm afterward.

"I also cannot wait for the results," Xie Wang nodded as he looked at Yan Yan with fascination, as he has never seen anyone like her before.

"What about you, Su Yang? I'd expected you to cultivate in the Celestial Pond, too. Why are you giving it up?" Xie Wang suddenly asked him.

Hearing his question, Su Yang spoke with a calm smile on his face, "Because my disciples take priority over me, and as a Dual Cultivator, the Celestial Pond will only benefit me if I had a partner with me."

"..."

The room instantly turned silent as the people there imagined Su Yang cultivating with the others inside the Celestial Pond, staining the holy water with his bodily liquid...

Seeing the awkward atmosphere in the room, Su Yang spoke, "Anyway, ignoring my situation, let's talk about Xing'er's conditions. How has your body been fairing lately? Do you feel any pain in your body yet?"

Chapter 630 Starting to Feel the Symptoms

Hearing Su Yang's question, a worried expression appeared on Xie Xingfang's face, and she spoke in a low voice, "As much as I want to say that everything is perfectly fine, I think my body is finally starting to feel the effects of the poison."

"Can you explain it in more detail?" Su Yang asked her.

Xie Xingfang nodded and said, "It started a few days after I returned home from the Profound Blossom Sect, and although it was not noticeable at first, I can feel my body temperature getting slightly warmer every day."

"Let me see your hands." Su Yang placed his tea down and walked to her.

Xie Xingfang offered her hand to him a few moments later.

"Hmm..." Su Yang closed his eyes as he inspected her body with his spiritual sense.

"What's wrong, Su Yang? Is it something serious?" Lord Xie asked him after seeing the frown on his face.

"No... Not yet." Su Yang shook his head.

"What do you mean by that?" Xie Wang asked him with an anxious expression on his face.

"It's nothing serious now, but she is starting to feel the symptoms, and it will only continue to worsen from this point. Furthermore, she's experiencing the symptoms a little earlier than I'd expected. If this continues, she might have less time than we thought."

The entire room turned silent after hearing Su Yang's words.

A few moments later, Liu Lanzhi spoke in a puzzled voice, "Umm... What is happening? Are you sick or something, Xing'er?"

Xie Xingfang turned to look at Su Yang, who nodded his head.

Seeing his approval, Xie Xingfang explained the situation to her.

"Due to my ignorance, I'd poisoned myself during my training, and I will die if it's not cured soon..."

"What?! You'll die?! It's that serious?!" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed in shock, as did the other disciples.

"What about a cure? Do you know how to cure it?" she quickly asked.

Xie Xingfang nodded and said, "Yes, we know how to cure it, and we even have the prescription for it. However, we do not have the ingredients for the cure yet, as we are still waiting for two of them..."

"Speaking of the ingredients... The Devil Blood Ginseng should be mature now, so we can harvest it." Su Yang suddenly said.

"Really? Then what are we waiting for?!" Lord Xie immediately said.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I can get the Devil Blood Ginseng at any time, but even if we have it, we cannot cure her without the other ingredient— the Purple Qilin's blood."

He then looked at Xie Wang and asked him, "Do you have the ingredients ready for the poison-immunity pill I spoke about before?"

"..."

Xie Wang remained silent with a dispirited expression on his face, causing Su Yang to frown, "You don't have the ingredients?"

"Unfortunately, we are missing one ingredient from the list— the Four Element Roots." Xie Wang sighed. "I have looked everywhere for it, and there's a good chance that it doesn't exist in this world."

"Why do you look as though there's no hope left?" Su Yang suddenly said after seeing his pale face. "If it doesn't exist in the Eastern Continent, we can simply go to the Holy Central Continent to see whether they have it or not. If they don't, I will think of something else."

"A-Are you really going to the Holy Central Continent...?" Lord Xie asked him with disbelief.

He nodded and said, "I actually wanted to go earlier, but then I remembered that you also wanted to go, so I decided to wait for a little bit longer."

"..." Lord Xie was speechless. He didn't think Su Yang would actually keep his words, much less wait for him.

"So? Do you want to go or not?" Su Yang asked him a moment later.

"I-I-I do! I do!" Lord Xie nodded his head in a hasty manner.

"C-Can I also come, too?" Xie Wang asked him, looking like a child who was being left behind.

"Do as you please," said Su Yang.

"Thank you!" Xie Wang said to him with teary eyes.

"When can we go?" Lord Xie asked him.

"We can leave once they enter the Celestial Pond. That'll give us seven days."

"Good! The Celestial Pond will be open in three days!" Lord Xie said.

Su Yang nodded, then he looked at Xie Xingfang and spoke, "Don't tell me you are also entering the Celestial Pond?"

"Eh? I can't?" Xie Xingfang looked at him with wide eyes, as this was fairly sudden.

Even Lord Xie and Xie Wang looked at him with anxious expressions, even feeling a little impatient for his answer.

"Unless you want to worsen your condition, I wouldn't suggest it." Su Yang then said a moment later.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After a moment of silence, Xie Wang sighed loudly, "I knew something like this would happen..."

He slapped his forehead before rubbing his temples in a stressful manner.

"Is there anything we can do, Su Yang? Missing the Celestial Pond is no small matter..." Lord Xie asked him. Surely, there must be something they can do.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "If you don't mind worsening the poison in her body in exchange for some minor improvements in her cultivation and potentially making the cure pointless then you can do whatever you want. Don't say I didn't warn you, though."

"..."

The entire room turned speechless again.

"Su Yang is right, father. What use are 2 years of cultivation if I die from the poison two months later? While it definitely hurts that I cannot enter the Celestial Pond now, I can simply do it when it opens again the next time. And even if I have to wait 100 years, at least I will still be alive then."

Hearing her words, Lord Xie nodded his head and said, "I understand. You are right, Xing'er. I would rather have you alive and well even if you miss the Celestial Pond."

Chapter 631 Offering Her Service as a Woman

"Now that Xing'er cannot enter the Celestial Pond, we have one open space." Lord Xie said

He then turned to look at Liu Lanzhi and continued to speak, "Since that's the case, would you like to cultivate in the Celestial Pond on her behalf, Sect Master Liu?"

"M-Me...?" Liu Lanzhi unconsciously pointed at herself with a dumbfounded expression on her face, clearly in disbelief.

Lord Xie nodded and said, "Well, you are the only one here that can enter, and it'll be too bothersome to find someone else at this point."

"T-Thank you very much for giving me this opportunity, Senior Xie!" Liu Lanzhi bowed to him afterward.

"Don't even mention it," he said with a smile on his face.

Sometime later, Xie Wang said, "I'm going to prepare for our journey to the Holy Central Continent."

"Me, too. I have a lot of work to do if I want to leave the Eastern Continent for a few days." Lord Xie said.

"I will let the servants arrange your rooms."

Su Yang nodded, and he said, "You can just arrange for three rooms, one for Disciple Ji and one for Yan Yan. I will stay in the same room with Liu Lanzhi and Disciple Chen, as they also have to prepare for the Celestial Pond."

"Huh? Why would they need any preparations for... Oh..." Lord Xie realized the meaning behind Su Yang's words midway through his sentence, making an awkward face afterward.

"Okay, three rooms then."

However, Disciple Ji suddenly said, "Your Majesty, just two rooms is fine! I will also sleep in the same room as the Sect Masters!"

"..." Lord Xie was speechless.

"Are you sure, Disciple Ji? The only reason we are staying in the same room is because we are dual cultivators, and you belong to the other division..." Liu Lanzhi said to her.

Disciple Ji nodded and said, "I am well aware of the implications, Sect Master Liu. Even though I am only an ordinary Cultivator, I would still like to offer my services to Sect Master Su as a woman who is attracted to him."

"..."

Lord Xie and Xie Xingfang could feel their jaws dropping after hearing the disciple's words, and even Liu Lanzhi couldn't help but admire her courage.

"If you say it like that, I can't say no," Su Yang said to her with a calm smile on his face.

"Thank you, Sect Master..."

"What about me?" Yan Yan suddenly spoke up. "I also want to sleep in the same room as Master."

However, Su Yang quickly said, "You... You are still too young, Yan Yan."

"Why does my age matter?" Yan Yan tilted her head in a puzzled manner.

"If you don't understand why we are sleeping together, then you are definitely too young to participate," Liu Lanzhi said to her.

"..."

Yan Yan was truly speechless. Aren't they just sleeping together? Why does it matter whether she's an adult or not?

"Um... If you don't want to sleep alone, you can sleep with me." Xie Xingfang suddenly suggested to her.

Yan Yan looked at Xie Xingfang with a nonchalant expression before shaking her head, "No, I want to sleep with Master."

"..."

Xie Xingfang felt as though her pride had just taken a hit when Yan Yan refused her invitation, especially since this is her first time inviting anyone to sleep with her in her own room. Even though Yan Yan is only a little girl, it still felt extremely awkward.

"I-I see..." Xie Xingfang could only respond with a stiff smile on her face.

"How about this, Yan Yan." Su Yang suddenly said to her, "You will sleep alone today, but we can sleep together tomorrow."

"..."

After a moment of pondering, Yan Yan nodded her head. Although she didn't like feeling left out, she also didn't want to become a disobedient disciple, so she could only endure it for today.

"Thank you, Yan Yan." Su Yang said to her.

Sometime later, Xie Xingfang said to Yan Yan, "Come with me. I'll show you to your room."

Once Xie Xingfang and Yan Yan left the room, a beautiful young female servant entered the room to lead Su Yang and the other girls to another room— one that had the largest and sturdiest bed in the entire building.

'I can't believe that I am actually going to cultivate in the Xie Family's household...' Liu Lanzhi could barely fathom the insane situation they were in.

As for the disciples, they were simply too excited about cultivating with Su Yang to think of anything else.

"If the esteemed guests need anything, this lowly one will be waiting outside." The servant said to them with her head lowered.

However, just as the servant turned around, Su Yang's voice resounded, "Do you want to join us?"

"...Excuse me?"

The servant turned around with a dumbfounded expression on her face, as did Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples.

"I can see your body fidgeting even now. If you want to join us, I don't mind. The more the merrier, after all." Su Yang said with a smile.

"B-But I cannot..."

"What's the matter? I thought you said to let you know if we need anything."

"While that's true, I don't dare to do that sort of thing in His Majesty's dwelling..." The servant showed him a bittersweet smile.

If Lord Xie learns of her scandalous actions when she's supposed to be doing her job, losing her job would be the least of her worries.

"You are still doing your job as a servant by 'serving' me. If Lord Xie or anyone has an issue with that, I'll give them a piece of my mind, so you don't need to worry about any punishment. I can promise you that."

"Really...? You are going to do that for me, a mere servant you've never met before?" She asked him.

Su Yang nodded and spoke with a charming smile on his face, "Your status is not relevant. I only see a beautiful woman who's surrounded by a lonely feeling, so I want to help you relieve that stress."

Hearing his words, the female servant blushed. One of the requirements for working as a servant for the Xie Family is that they must live in the same building to make it more convenient and efficient for their job. And while working for the Xie Family may be incredibly rewarding and even make one feel distinguished, it does make them feel lonely most of the time, as the servants would rarely have any free time for themselves, and even when they do get some free time, they would not have the energy to do anything else besides sleep.

After a moment of silence, the female servant finally nodded her head in a bashful manner.

"Come over here," Su Yang said to her.

The female servant then locked the door behind her before approaching the bed.

"This is my first time, Young Master..." The female servant trembled slightly when Su Yang loosened her robes.

"I will take the lead. Just follow the flow of my movements and enjoy the pleasure."

The female servant nodded before Su Yang laid her on the large bed.

A few moments later, the female servant began moaning with pleasure while the other girls on the bed watched with a passionate gaze.

Chapter 632 A Painful Mistake

"Aaaaah~!"

"Mmmmm~!"

"Aaaah!"

The female servant moaned loudly as Su Yang skillfully pleased her pink flower with his tongue, preparing it for penetration.

A few minutes later, when her cave was wet enough, Su Yang inserted his stiff rod into her body, spreading the cave wide open and tearing her insides apart.

"Ahhhh!"

The female servant nearly choked on her own saliva from shock when she felt something massive and hard shoved up her virgin cave, feeling as though someone had just shoved their arm up her hole.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her in a gentle voice, feeling a tight yet soft sensation wrapped around his entire sword.

After taking a moment to recover, she nodded with a painful expression, "It hurts a little, but I am fine..."

"Then I will start moving now," said Su Yang, and he began moving his hips a few seconds later.

"Aaaah~!"

Although the female servant could only feel pain at first, after just a few thrusts, as though a miracle had happened, she could no longer feel any pain, only pleasure.

"Ooooh..."

"Aaaah~!"

"Mmmmm~"

The female servant moaned without restraint, feeling as though her entire body was on fire. However, the burning feeling was not painful in the slightest. It was, in fact, extremely pleasant and comfortable enough to make her beg him for more.

"More! Fuck me more, Young Master!" The female servant looked at him with an enchanted gaze and a lustful expression on her face.

A few minutes later, the female servant reached her climax and began twitching like a fish out of the water as her lower body gushed with a river of Yin Qi.

Once the servant calmed down, Su Yang removed his rod from her body, pulling out a slightly reddish meatstick that was dyed by the servant's virgin blood.

"Allow this lowly one to clean it for you, Young Master..."

The female servant managed to sit up despite her exhaustion, and she began licking Su Yang's meatstick clean a few moments later.

Once his sword was sparkling clean again, mostly due to it being coated in saliva, the female servant collapsed onto the bed with a fully satisfied expression on her face, looking as though she was in heaven.

"Hm? You didn't release your Yang Qi into her?" Liu Lanzhi asked him after noticing this fact.

"My Yang Qi would do more harm than good to her, who is not even a Cultivator." Su Yang shook his head.

"I see..."

Su Yang then looked at Disciple Ji and asked her, "Do you want to be next?"

Disciple Ji immediately nodded and crawled towards him on the bed.

"I will loosen you up first," said Su Yang once she was fully naked.

"Can I also please you simultaneously?" she suddenly asked him.

Su Yang nodded before laying his back on the bed whilst Disciple Ji climbed above him with her butt facing his face.

Once they were in the Yin Yang position that was also known as the 69 position, Disciple Ji began sucking on Su Yang's meatstick while he savored her pink slit with his large hands firmly gripped onto her soft and round buttocks.

A few minutes of slurping sounds later, Disciple Ji suddenly stopped sucking and spoke in a hasty voice, "I-It's coming out!"

"You can let it out," Su Yang responded with calmness.

"..."

While Disciple Ji wanted to ask if he was sure about it, she could not hold onto her climax any longer and released her Yin Qi, showering Su Yang's face with her holy water.

Su Yang closed his eyes and allowed her Yin Qi to rain on his face with a cool expression, looking like a heroic warrior in the rain after an intense battle.

"A-Are you okay, Su Yang...?" Disciple Ji asked him afterward with a worried face, afraid that she might have released too much Yin Qi.

"I am perfectly fine," he said as he combed his wet hair backward, even licking the Yin Qi that was around his lips in an erotic manner.

"Um... I think I am ready to take it," she said to him a moment later.

Su Yang nodded and said, "You can do whatever you want with it."

Hearing his words, Disciple Ji looked at the massive rod before her and swallowed in a nervous manner. Will it really fit inside her small hole?

After taking a moment to prepare herself, Disciple Ji turned around and squatted above his pelvis area with her cave's entrance touching the very tip of Su Yang's sword.

She then used one of her hands to spread apart her pink slit wide open to allow for an easier entrance. And because she'd just climaxed very recently, there was Yin Qi still leaking out of her hole, which

dripped onto the rod that was right below her cave, making it look as though she was saucing up his meatstick before sticking it inside her lower mouth.

Even Liu Lanzhi couldn't help but swallow nervously after seeing Su Yang's tasty-looking meatstick.

A moment later, Disciple Ji began squatting even lower, until she could feel the hot and hard tip of Su Yang's rod touching the entrance to her cave.

"Haaa..."

And after taking a deep breath, Disciple Ji began inserting his rod even deeper into her hole.

However, because of her nervousness that was causing her legs to become shaky, Disciple Ji suddenly slipped and fell, accidentally shoving his entire rod into her cave in an instant.

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhh!"

Disciple Ji shrieked in pain when she took Su Yang's entire shaft so suddenly and forcefully, feeling as though she'd just tore an enormous hole down there.

Gasp

Disciple Chen gasped in shock while Liu Lanzhi covered her mouth after witnessing this scene, and even Su Yang couldn't help but become startled by this unexpected event.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her a moment later. He could only imagine the pain she was feeling at this moment.

"Y-Y-Yes..." Disciple Ji spoke in a suppressed voice with her jaw clenched tightly, clearly trying to hold back from crying out loud.

Chapter 633 A Talented Squirter

"I...I am okay... I am really okay..." Disciple Ji spoke with teary eyes, looking as though she could cry at any moment.

'What a resilient young lady. I would've definitely cried my eyes out if I had to take a penis at that size so forcefully as a maiden who's never had any experience before.' Liu Lanzhi said to herself, praising Disciple Ji inwardly.

"Let me relieve some of the pain for you." Su Yang then poked her stomach with his index finger that was glowing with a warm light.

Very quickly, Disciple Ji could feel the pain below quickly subduing. However, while the pain was disappearing, the blood did not slow down and continued to flow from her cave.

"Do you want to stop here today?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"N-No!" She quickly shook her head before speaking, "I can handle this! It's just a little pain and blood! It'll eventually stop!"

Seeing the brave and stubborn expression on her graceful face, Su Yang nodded his head and said, "Then you can move at your own pace for now. Once you are feeling more comfortable, I will start moving."

"Okay."

Disciple Ji then inhaled and exhaled deeply a few times before she got back on her feet. Sometime later, she began moving her hips up and down, riding Su Yang's thick rod with stiff yet passionate movements.

Pap! Pap! Pap!

Su Yang could feel her soft buttocks slapping against his pelvis area every time she moved.

"Haaa... haaa... haaaaa..."

Disciple Ji moaned in a cute voice as she felt Su Yang's rod stimulating her inner wall with every stroke, causing her flower to drool with love nectar.

And many minutes later, when all of her pain was gone, Su Yang grabbed her by the hips and said, "I will take care of you from here."

Once Disciple Ji nodded her head, Su Yang pulled her body down while thrusting his hip forward.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Feeling Su Yang's rod reaching the deepest parts of her cave, Disciple Ji screamed in pleasure while her body trembled from bliss. It had taken Su Yang only a single movement to knock her soul into Heaven.

A moment later, Yin Qi flowed from Disciple Ji's cave like a waterfall.

"This is just the beginning," Su Yang said to her as he continued moving despite the fact that she was still climaxing.

"Aaaaaaaah~!"

Disciple Ji's cave squirted Yin Qi as though it was a broken dam, soaking the wall behind with sparkling liquid.

"W-What a talented squirter..." Liu Lanzhi mumbled in a dazed voice after seeing the way Disciple Ji stained the wall with her Yin Qi, and it helped her recall her first meeting with Su Yang during the Inner Court disciple assessment, where she experienced his divine techniques for the first time and squirted everywhere as the result.

"Oh, this is quite amazing..." Even Su Yang praised her squirting ability when she hasn't stopped squirting even many moments later, and it only made him want to test her limits even more.

Thus, he continued to thrust his hot rod into her body until she eventually exhausts her last drop of Yin Qi a few minutes later.

"You are quite impressive. It makes one wonder why you didn't become a dual cultivator instead." Su Yang said to her afterward.

However, Disciple Ji did not respond, as she was simply too exhausted.

"Here, let me reward you for enduring so much today..."

The sword in Disciple Ji's body suddenly began trembling, and a moment later, it released hundreds of millions of tiny warriors into her body. The tiny white warriors then rushed through the battlefield until it could no longer advance, filling every nook and cranny in Disciple Ji's cave.

"I feel... so full..." Disciple Ji mumbled with a dazed expression on her face.

Su Yang removed his plug from her hole a moment later, and the tiny white warriors could be seen falling from her cliff.

"Maybe we should train her as a dual cultivator instead," Liu Lanzhi spoke in a joking tone sometime later. "It'd be a waste if someone talented like her becomes a normal cultivator."

Su Yang smiled at her words and said, "Who knows, maybe she'll voluntarily become a dual cultivator after what she experienced today."

Sometime later, Su Yang turned his attention to the other disciple, Disciple Chen.

"I am going to fill your body to the brim with my Yang Qi so that you can cultivate in the Celestial Pond efficiently," he said to her.

"Please take care of me..." She nodded with an excited smile on her face, as her little sister has been feeling this hot and tingly sensation for a while now.

"Since you are already this wet, we won't need any foreplay, right?" he said to her after seeing that she was already drooling wet when she removed her clothes.

"Go ahead... Stick it inside me..." Disciple Chen laid on the bed with her legs spread wide open.

A moment later, Su Yang shoved his rod into her slippery cave with ease.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Disciple Chen moaned with passion, feeling as though she'd entered Heaven.

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body, filling her cave until it began leaking from the entrance.

However, he did not immediately unplug his shaft from her hole and instead opened his storage ring to take out a piece of talisman.

"I am going to seal the Yang Qi inside you so that you can use it at the Celestial Pond. Don't remove it or cultivate it until then," he said to her.

"Won't I get pregnant if I don't cultivate the Yang Qi immediately?" Disciple Chen asked him with raised eyebrows, not that she minded conceiving his child.

"My Yang Qi is special. You'll be fine," he responded with confidence.

"I can vouch for his words," Liu Lanzhi suddenly said.

Su Yang then turned to look at her and said, "It's your turn now."

"About time," she nodded with a smile.

A moment later, Liu Lanzhi removed her clothes, and to Disciple Chen's surprise, there was already a seal on her body. How long have they been doing this? No wonder why Liu Lanzhi vouched for him.

Chapter 634 Elite Sec

Once it was finally Liu Lanzhi's turn to cultivate with Su Yang, she removed her clothes and removed her seal a moment later, letting the Yang Qi that had been stored inside to leak down her thighs.

"There's only a little bit of your Yang Qi left inside," she said to him.

He nodded and said, "Don't worry, I will fill you to the brim later."

"But before I do that, let's remove the old Yang Qi."

Su Yang began massaging her body with one hand and fingering her wet cave with the other, letting her Yin Qin flush the Yang Qi out of her body.

A few minutes later, once Liu Lanzhi emptied out the Yang Qi from her body, Su Yang inserted his sword into her pink cave that was twitching from lust and desire.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Feeling a massive shaft brushing against her inner walls, Liu Lanzhi moaned loudly, and her body trembled from pleasure.

Pap! Pap! Pap!

Su Yang pounded Liu Lanzhi's body as though he was forging a masterpiece with his hammer, causing Liu Lanzhi to feel as though her entire body was on fire.

"Yes! Yes~! That is the spot! Do it harder! Fuck me harder, Su Yang!" Liu Lanzhi gazed at him with a lustful face, her gaze pleading for more.

Pap! Pap! Pap!

The large bed began to shake slightly when Su Yang increased his intensity, and Liu Lanzhi's voice also increased in volume and sharpness.

Many minutes of cultivation later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Liu Lanzhi's cave.

"Aaaaaaaah~! So hot~!"

Liu Lanzhi felt as though a volcano had erupted inside her stomach, yet it was not painful in the slightest but incredibly pleasant instead, and in just a few moments, her stomach was filled with Yang Qi.

Su Yang then retrieved a seal and swiftly sealed her cave entrance without letting even a single drop leak.

"Wow, this feels even fuller than usual." Liu Lanzhi said to him afterward.

"That's because I actually released more Yang Qi than usual, filling your stomach until it reached its limits," he said to her. "With the Celestial Pond speeding up your cultivation speed, you'll need more resources than normal."

"I see..." Liu Lanzhi nodded with an understanding face.

A few minutes later, Su Yang looked at Liu Lanzhi and Disciple Chen and said, "The two of you won't be able to continue because of the seal."

He then turned to look at Disciple Ji and the female servant, "What about you two? We can do as many sessions as you want."

"I want to do it again!" Disciple Ji spoke without hesitation.

"If... If possible, this servant would like to continue pleasing the Young Master," said the female servant with a bashful expression.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I will keep you both accompanied until you are satisfied."

Thus, Su Yang began another session with Disciple Ji and the female servant, and they would continue to cultivate until the girls reached their limits and collapsed from exhaustion.

Meanwhile, Liu Lanzhi and Disciple Chen watched with envy, and they regretted sealing their lower mouths so quickly.

Seeing this, Su Yang said to them with a smile on his face, "If you want to, we can remove your seals so we can cultivate more, and we will reseal them again at the end."

"You can do that?! Why didn't you say so in the beginning!" Liu Lanzhi wasted no time tearing her seal apart, letting the Yang Qi in her stomach to flow out like a waterfall.

Disciple Chen followed Liu Lanzhi and also removed her seal, and the three of them continued to cultivate until the following morning.

"Su Yang, are you awake?" Xie Xingfang's voice resounded outside early in the morning.

"Yes, I am awake. Give me a second to dress." Su Yang said to her.

Once he was fully dressed, Su Yang opened the door and asked her, "What's the matter?"

"Good morning, Su Yang. I was just wondering if you would like to eat breakfast with us." Xie Xingfang asked him.

"Breakfast, huh? Sure." He nodded.

"What about the others...?" she asked him with her body slightly fidgeting.

Su Yang looked at the girls sleeping soundly on the bed before speaking, "I don't think they'll be able to make it."

"I see... Although it's unfortunate, we still have dinner tonight," she said.

Sometime later, Xie Xingfang brought Su Yang to another room, where the Xie Family and Yan Yan was already present and sitting around the table that was filled to the brim with food emitting spiritual energy.

"This is quite the meal even for a family of your stature. Don't tell me you eat this every morning?" Su Yang spoke after seeing the spiritual food on the table.

"This is a special occasion. We normally don't even eat breakfast, much less one this extravagant." Lord Xie said to him.

"Hm? Why are you alone? What about the ladies?" Xie Wang asked him after noticing that the others were not with him.

"Let's just say they were up all night cultivating diligently." Su Yang responded with a calm smile on his face.

"..."

Xie Wang was rendered speechless by Su Yang's honesty. To think he'd be bold enough to have sex in someone else's house and even talk about it without any shame on his face!

"As expected of Dual Cultivators. You people are something else." Xie Wang shook his head inwardly.

"I'll take that as a compliment," said Su Yang as he took a seat at the table.

"Anyway, let's talk after we finish eating, or the food will get cold." Lord Xie spoke before reaching for the food.

An hour later, when everyone had satisfied stomachs, the servants began cleaning the table.

Once the table was cleaned, Lord Xie looked at Su Yang and spoke with a serious expression on his face, "I already know the answer to this question, but I still want to ask you about it regardless."

After a moment of silence, he continued, "Are you willing to accept the title of Elite Sect for the Profound Blossom Sect?"

Chapter 635 Alliance With the Xie Family

The entire place turned silent after Lord Xie's question for Su Yang, and the Xie Family glared at him as though they wanted to eat him alive.

"If you already know the answer, why did you still bother asking?" Su Yang spoke a moment later with a calm expression on his face.

"Just in case you decide to exceed my expectations and surprise me, even if that chance might be almost nonexistent."

"I see..." Su Yang slowly nodded his head, and he responded a moment later in a clear voice, "I refuse."

A bitter smile appeared on Lord Xie's face after hearing his words. Even though he'd already expected this answer, it was still baffling to him that someone would actually refuse his offer. In fact, Su Yang is the first person to have ever refused his offer, setting a precedent.

"You probably already know the reason, but in case you don't..." Su Yang cleared his throat before continuing to speak, "By accepting your offer, the Profound Blossom Sect is essentially admitting to the world that we will lower ourselves before you— the Xie Family, becoming just another one of your

'forces' like the other Elite Sects, and I will not let the Profound Blossom Sect become lackeys for anyone."

"The Profound Blossom Sect will continue to grow, and it will eventually become one of if not the most powerful force in the entire world."

"..."

Lord Xie stared at Su Yang with a serious expression on his face, and he spoke, "What are your goals? Why do you want the Profound Blossom Sect to have so much power? What do you gain from that?"

"My goals? I don't really have one, nor do I expect to gain anything in return for my efforts. As for why I want the Profound Blossom Sect to have so much power... Isn't it the Sect Masters' responsibility to strengthen, expand, and make a name for their own Sect? Don't everyone want the best for their own Sect? I did not take the position of Sect Master just for show, and just like every Sect Master out there, I will be doing everything in my power to improve my Sect. Though, there is one difference between me and the others— I actually have the ability to make the Profound Blossom Sect stand at the top of this world, and that's exactly what I intend on doing."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang continued to speak, "There's no need for the scary faces. Even though the Profound Blossom Sect is destined to surpass the Xie Family in every way, you don't have to worry about us taking your family's position as ruler of the Eastern Continent."

"And I am supposed to just trust your words? How do I know that you won't do the complete opposite in the future?" Lord Xie asked him with a frown.

"You won't know." Su Yang shrugged. "However, it's not as though the Profound Blossom Sect does not already have what it takes to take over the entire world. If I cared about ruling the Eastern Continent, I would've done so long ago."

"..."

Lord Xie did not open his mouth again after Su Yang finished his last sentence. Although he was not there to witness Su Yang's prowess when he fought Patriarch Gold, he knew very well that Su Yang already had the capability to replace him because Xie Wang, his father, had long told him about Su Yang's real strength and that if he truly wanted to, Su Yang could easily destroy the Xie Family.

"Let's not get too heated up so quickly right after breakfast, you two." Xie Wang was the first to break the awkward silence, and he looked at Su Yang and said, "We already knew that you have the ability to rule the Eastern Continent even before I witnessed your fight with the expert from the Holy Central Continent. However, despite that, we trust you, or else we wouldn't be sitting here so peacefully."

Su Yang nodded and said, "As long as you don't cause trouble for my Profound Blossom Sect or stick your nose where it does not belong, we will also keep our hands to ourselves and only operate within our own territory. If you are still worried, I can sign a contract or even a peace treaty."

"..."

Xie Wang and Lord Xie exchanged gazes with each other. They actually liked Su Yang's idea to sign a peace treaty.

However, before they can even open their mouths, Xie Xingfang spoke first, "Instead of a peace treaty which makes it sound as though we were enemies at one point, why don't we form an Alliance with each other? Like how your Profound Blossom Sect formed an Alliance with the Burning Lotus Sect and the Heavenly Swan Sect. This way, the Profound Blossom Sect will neither be above or below us, and we will exist as equals."

"An Alliance, huh? I can also do that," Su Yang nodded.

"What do you think, Father? Grandfather? Are you willing to form an Alliance with Su Yang— the Profound Blossom Sect?" Xie Xingfang took control of the entire situation and asked them as though she was in charge.

"Y-Yes..." They both nodded simultaneously, seemingly dumbfounded by her actions.

"Then it's decided, Su Yang. Our Xie Family will gladly form an Alliance with your Profound Blossom Sect," she said to him with a smile on her face. "We will announce it to the public after you return to the Profound Blossom Sect, as it would be troublesome if we are bombarded with questions by the public when we are already busy enough with our plans for the next few days."

"That's fine," Su Yang calmly nodded.

Thus, the Profound Blossom Sect and the Xie Family formed an Alliance with each other, setting a precedent, as this is the first time in history the Xie Family has formed an alliance with another power, which will greatly shock the Eastern Continent once news begins to spread.

Chapter 636 Existing in Another Space

A few hours have passed since breakfast finished before Liu Lanzhi and the other girls in Su Yang's room woke up from their slumber, feeling sore all over their body, especially the lower part of their bodies.

"You're finally awake," Su Yang spoke to them from the couch with a teacup in his hands.

"Su Yang? What's with that look? Did we miss something?" Liu Lanzhi raised her eyebrows.

"Besides breakfast and some small conversations, not really," he calmly responded.

"What?! We missed breakfast with the Xie Family?! Why didn't you wake us up, Su Yang?!" Liu Lanzhi cried out loud with a pale face. To think she'd skip breakfast with the Xie Family! Not only did she miss such a rare opportunity but she also disrespected the Xie Family by sleeping through their breakfast!

"You were all sleeping so peacefully that I did not dare to disturb it. And it's only breakfast, it's not like you missed the Celestial Pond." Su Yang casually shrugged.

"This is not your ordinary breakfast, Su Yang! It's breakfast with the Xie Family! You have a higher chance at encountering a fortunate encounter than coming across this kind of opportunity!"

"Don't worry, there's still dinner."

"..."

Liu Lanzhi sighed loudly before speaking a moment later, "Knowing your character, this 'small' conversation with the Xie Family definitely isn't as 'small' as you make it sound, so what did you talk about with them?"

Su Yang smiled upon hearing her words, and he spoke, "You know me well. Indeed, while the conversation may be insignificant in my eyes, I can imagine that it'll mean a great deal for you."

Liu Lanzhi swallowed nervously, silently anticipating his next words.

"After some conversation back and forth, it has been decided that the Xie Family and our Profound Blossom Sect will be forming an Alliance."

"What did you just say?!" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed in a shocked voice with her eyes spreading wider than her lower mouth last night.

"You are telling me that we are going to form an Alliance with the Xie Family?!" she asked him just to confirm that she did not hear wrong.

"Yes, and it will be announced to the public after we return to the Profound Blossom Sect." Su Yang calmly nodded his head.

"..."

Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples stared at him from the bed with a blank face, looking like they'd just witnessed a miracle.

The Profound Blossom Sect has formed an alliance with the Xie Family? Does this mean the Xie Family has accepted them as equals? Is such a thing even possible? This has never happened before! It was unprecedented!

"You should take a look at your own faces in the mirror right now. It's quite entertaining." Su Yang said to them with a smile before he continued sipping on the teacup.

After many moments of silence, Liu Lanzhi finally spoke in a mumbling voice, "The Profound Blossom Sect formed an alliance with the Xie Family..."

She then lifted her head to look at the ceiling and continued, "Are you seeing this, Ancestors? Our Profound Blossom Sect has received the Xie Family's approval!"

Su Yang shook his head with a smile on his face. Although he thought that she was overreacting, he couldn't blame her for being excited, as this is without a doubt a monumental step for the Profound Blossom Sect, perhaps even the Xie Family, as they will definitely benefit from this alliance, too.

Sometime later, once they have calmed down, Su Yang said to them, "There's really nothing to do until the Celestial Pond opens, so just relax until then."

Hearing his words, they nodded.

Many hours later, once it was time for dinner, Liu Lanzhi said to the Xie Family, "Thank you for forming an alliance with our Profound Blossom Sect. I really don't know what else to say besides that..."

"Don't even mention it." Xie Wang said to her.

Although he didn't say it, the only reason they agreed to form an alliance with them was due to Su Yang, and it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that without Su Yang, the Xie Family would not even have considered forming an alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect even if they were still as powerful. In other words, the Xie Family formed an alliance with Su Yang and not the Profound Blossom Sect itself.

"Let's do our best to support each other, Sect Master Liu." Xie Xingfang said to her with a smile.

"Definitely!" Liu Lanzhi nodded.

After dinner, Lord Xie said to them, "Regarding the Celestial Pond, after checking the seal today, it appears that the place will be opened a little bit earlier than scheduled, so you should be able to enter the Celestial Pond by noon tomorrow."

"A seal? The Celestial Pond is sealed?" Liu Lanzhi asked with a curious look on her face.

Lord Xie nodded and said, "The Celestial Pond does not actually exist in this world; it exists in another space, almost like how storage rings and pouches work. Once the seal is broken, it will reveal a portal for seven days before closing itself again, and you will use that time to cultivate in the Celestial Pond."

"W-Wait a second... You said that the portal will close itself? What happens if we do not leave the Celestial Pond by then?" Liu Lanzhi asked him with an anxious feeling in her heart.

"Well... you'll have to stay inside until it opens again the next time... in 100 years..." Lord Xie responded with a serious expression on his face.

"..."

Liu Lanzhi stared at him with a speechless face. She didn't think it would be this dangerous! Though, if one could cultivate in the Celestial Pond for 100 years, wouldn't that be incredibly worth it?

However, Lord Xie then continued to speak, "I know what you're thinking, but the Celestial Pond will lose its effectiveness once the portal closes, so you can forget about cultivating there for 100 years."

"But you don't have to worry about being locked inside since we have a few tools that will let you know when to come out."

Chapter 637 - Becoming Rebellious

"This seal... is it a formation?" Su Yang suddenly asked them.

"We're not sure, actually." Xie Wang responded. "It looks like a formation, but when we got the top formation experts in the Eastern Continent to look at it, they were unable to find the formation, saying it's a natural phenomenon."

Hearing such words, Su Yang shook his head and said, "Just because you cannot see it doesn't mean it's not there. Are they really the top formation experts? I would strip away their titles if I were you."

"..."

The people there were speechless. Though, they were unable to deny his words, as they have witnessed for themselves how he can create powerful formations with the snap of his fingers while it may take others tens of years to create.

"Then I have another question— why are you limiting the number of people who can enter that place to 4? Is there a specific reason?" Su Yang then asked.

"Yes, because the Celestial Pond will drastically lose its effectiveness if there are more than 4 people cultivating there at once. Nothing will happen if there are only four people cultivating there, but as soon as we add an extra person in there, everyone's progress will slow down by around 50%." Xie Wang explained to him.

Su Yang slightly narrowed his eyes after hearing Xie Wang's words, seemingly in deep thoughts.

A moment of silence later, he nodded, "I see what's going on here. Thank you for confirming my speculations."

"Eh? What do you mean by that? Do you know something about the Celestial Pond?" Lord Xie asked him.

"A thing or two, but I'll have to see it before I can be 100% certain."

Lord Xie and Xie Wang looked at each other with wide eyes. The Celestial Pond was found by the Ancestor of the Xie Family over a thousand years ago, yet they know pretty much nothing about it besides the fact that it can improve one's cultivation speed if they cultivated inside it.

"Can you tell us about it? Even if you aren't confident, we want to hear it." Xie Wang asked him a moment later.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I can tell you, but you'll have to wait."

"..."

After a few seconds of silence, Su Yang suddenly said, "Actually, I can tell you a little bit about the Celestial Pond right now."

They all looked at him with flickering eyes filled with anticipation.

"The Celestial Pond is not its actual name... or at least that's not what I would call it, and saying that it can only be used once every 100 years is also wrong."

Lord Xie immediately stood up from shock after hearing his words, and he exclaimed, "Are you saying that we don't have to wait 100 years to use the Celestial Pond?!"

However, Su Yang did not respond to his question and merely looked at him with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Damn it, Su Yang! How can you tell us something like that and not tell us everything you know?! You're clearly just teasing us with that information!" Lord Xie yelled at him in frustration.

"So what if I am?" Su Yang remained sitting there with a calm expression on his face. "If you can't wait, you can try figuring it out yourself."

Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples began sweating after seeing the fierce atmosphere between Su Yang and Lord Xie, fearing that the alliance between them might end before the day even ends.

"Calm down and have a little more patience, father. Su Yang said he'll tell us when the time is right. There's no reason for him to lie to us." Xie Xingfang suddenly said to him in a calm voice.

Lord Xie's eyebrows twitched when Xie Xingfang took Su Yang's side, and he looked at her and said, "I have been ignoring this for a while but you... you are becoming more and more rebellious lately, aren't you?"

"With all due respect, I have no clue as to what you are talking about, father." Xie Xingfang spoke with a nonchalant expression on her face.

"Hmph! You can act stupid all you want, but don't think I can't see what's happening." Lord Xie coldly snorted.

He then turned to look at Su Yang and spoke, "Anyway, if you don't want to tell me, I won't linger around any longer, as there is still a lot of work to be done!"

Once Lord Xie left, Xie Wang spoke with a weird smile on his face, "Is there any particular reason why you are always trying to irritate him?"

"No, not really." Su Yang shrugged. "It's just my nature to tease anyone who seems to be begging for it."

Xie Wang lifted his eyebrows in a surprised manner. Did Lord Xie have a face that begged to be teased? He couldn't tell. Though, it was not as though he didn't understand Su Yang's feeling, as he also enjoyed teasing Lord Xie when he was only a young man.

But little did Xie Wang know that from Su Yang's perspective, everyone in this room— this entire world could be considered a mere child before his countless years of experience.

Sometime later, everyone returned to their own rooms to rest for tomorrow.

"Master, I can sleep with you tonight, right?" Yan Yan asked him as they approached their rooms.

"Of course, since that's what I promised you yesterday." He nodded.

Thus, Yan Yan switched rooms with Liu Lanzhi and the disciples for the night.

Once they entered the room Yan Yan immediately climbed on the bed, laid down, and proceeded to stare at him in silence.

Su Yang smiled upon seeing this and also climbed on the bed, before sleeping right beside her.

"Thank you, Master, for sleeping with me. My parents used to do this every night before they died," she suddenly said to him as she snuggled closer to him.

"Your parents... If you don't mind me asking, how did they die?" he asked her a moment later.

Chapter 638 - Yan Yan's Mysterious Background

"I don't know how my parents died," Yan Yan said after hearing Su Yang's question.

"Eh?" Su Yang turned his head to look at her with his eyebrows raised in a puzzled manner.

"My parents disappeared the day I turned 10 years old, and they haven't returned since then." Yan Yan explained to him.

"They disappeared? Then why would you say that they are dead? They could be alive and anywhere in this world," he said.

"Because the spirits told me," she responded.

"The Profound Qi told you that your parents died? Now that's something I have never heard of before." Su Yang spoke with a pondering face.

Yan Yan nodded, and she continued to speak, "Before my parents disappeared, they told me to not trust people no matter who they are and that I should only trust the spirits."

"So that's why you keep your distance from everyone. However... your parents... they knew about your unique talent?" Su Yang couldn't believe it.

Yan Yan's condition is so exceedingly rare that it would be completely reasonable if nobody in this world knew of its existence, nor would they believe it even if they were told about it. However, her parents somehow knew about it? Just who are her parents, and why did they disappear? Furthermore, why would the Profound Qi tell her that her parents were dead? Nothing about her situation made sense.

"Yes, my parents knew that I could talk to the spirits since I was very young," she said.

"..."

After a moment of speechlessness, he asked her, "Where did you live before coming to the Profound Blossom Sect?"

However, she shook her head and said, "I don't know... I was always surrounded by trees and mountains. The first time I left that place was after my parents disappeared when the spirits guided me to the Profound Blossom Sect— to you."

Hearing Yan Yan's words, Su Yang found her situation even more suspicious. However, he could not see any reason why she would lie to him, which made it quite puzzling.

"Master, you won't disappear on me one day, right?" Yan Yan suddenly spoke in a lonely voice, snapping Su Yang out of his daze.

"I... I don't think I can promise you that..." Su Yang spoke after a moment of silence.

"Why, Master? Are you going to leave me alone in the future?" she looked at him with wide eyes.

"It's not that I am leaving you," Su Yang said to her, and he continued, "To tell you the truth, I do not belong in this world. I am someone who came to this place by chance, and when the time comes, I will be returning to my own home."

"Then can I come with you, Master?" she wasted no time asking him, not even questioning his background.

"I don't think that would be a good idea, unfortunately. You are beloved by the Profound Qi in this world, but every world has its unique Profound Qi, and if I take you away from this world to another

world, there's a high chance that you might lose your talent. In other words, you will no longer be able to communicate with the spirits."

Hearing Su Yang's words, Yan Yan turned silent. Losing her parents had affected her greatly, and it's only because of her ability to speak with the spirits that she could cope with their death. A life without being able to speak with the spirits... she cannot imagine living such a harsh life.

"Now do you understand why I cannot make that promise to you?" Su Yang said to her. "I don't mind bringing you with me, but will you be able to bear losing your talent? And there's no guarantee that you will be able to return to this place once you leave."

"Let's go to sleep for now. You have plenty of time to think about it since there's still an entire year before I leave." Su Yang then said to her.

"Yes, Master..." Yan Yan nodded before snuggling even closer to him until she was essentially sticking to his body.

'What a mysterious little girl,' Su Yang thought to himself before closing his eyes.

Sometime later, soft breathing filled the room.

The next morning, everybody from the Profound Blossom Sect and the Xie Family gathered in the living room.

"Are you all ready to cultivate in the Celestial Pond?" Lord Xie asked Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples.

"Yes, Senior Xie!" They nodded with a serious expression.

"Then we'll head to the location of the seal now."

Su Yang and the others proceeded to follow Lord Xie to the mountain range a few miles away from Snowfall City, where Xie Wang built his living quarters in order to protect and study the Celestial Pond.

A few hours later, they all stood before an empty land somewhere in the mountain range.

"Where is the seal?" Liu Lanzhi looked around with a puzzled look on her face.

"You won't see it until it decides to appear," Lord Xie said to her before turning to look at Su Yang and continuing, "However, you can try asking him. Maybe he'll know something like he always does."

Everybody there turned to look at Su Yang after being put on the spot by Lord Xie.

"What? Are you telling me that you cannot see it?" Su Yang smiled at Lord Xie, who frowned.

"I don't need to see it since I know where it is. And since you seem to know everything, let's see if you know where the seal will open."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Okay, but it won't be fun if there's nothing on the line. How about a small bet?"

"A bet, you say?" Lord Xie raised his eyebrows, feeling an ominous feeling from Su Yang's grin, yet he did not want to back down after going this far.

"Interesting. Let's do it." Lord Xie nodded his head a moment later.

Meanwhile, Liu Lanzhi sighed inwardly, feeling sorry for Lord Xie. As someone who has never won against Su Yang before, she knew very well that Lord Xie had no chance against him, as Su Yang would only gamble if he's confident in winning.

Chapter 639 - Lowering His Head

"What do you want to bet on?" Lord Xie asked Su Yang a moment later.

"If I am being honest, you have nothing that I want," Su Yang casually shrugged his shoulders and continued, "So you tell me what you want from me first."

"You have nothing that I truly want either!" Lord Xie said to him with a frown. "However, there is something I want you to do— lower your head before me and apologize for the number of times you have disrespected me. Do you think you can do that?"

Su Yang raised his eyebrows and acted surprised, "You want me to lower my head? That's quite an expensive demand you have there. It'll cost you."

'Hahaha! Knowing your character, you probably won't lower your head even if you were beaten to death, hence why I picked that!' Lord Xie laughed inwardly.

"The number of times I have lowered my head for someone can be counted on one hand, and they are all women that I have wronged. If you want me to lower my head for the bet, then I will have to request for something of similar value, but even if I ask for your life, it won't be enough to balance the scale." Su Yang said in a sighing voice.

"What!? You dare claim that my life is not worth as much as you lowering your head?!" Lord Xie looked at him with wide eyes, as he truly did not expect Su Yang to say such words. "Then what the hell do you want from me if even my life is not enough?"

"There is a saying that a man's dignity and pride is worth more than their life. If I can locate the seal in this place before the Celestial Pond opens, I want you to run around Snowfall City n.a.k.e.d." Su Yang said with a calm voice.

"You want me to what?!" Lord Xie's jaw dropped to the ground after hearing his unreasonable demand.

Even Xie Xingfang couldn't help but cover her mouth from shock, not even daring to imagine the image of her father running around the city while n.a.k.e.d.

Meanwhile, Xie Wang chuckled at that idea.

"You are asking for too much, Su Yang! There's no way that I would run around the city while n.a.k.e.d— not even if you torture me!" Lord Xie shouted angrily.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "You are such a difficult person to deal with. Fine, since I don't want our alliance to end so quickly, I'll make it easier for you— Instead of running n.a.k.e.d around the city, I want you to summon every family and sect in the Eastern Continent that's under your control and have them gather at one place. Only one representative is needed from each power."

"What the heck?" Lord Xie looked at Su Yang with a dumbfounded face. What exactly is he trying to pull here?

"There are tens of thousands of families and thousands of sects out there. It'll take months to arrange something like that. And for what purpose are you trying to gather so many people?" Lord Xie asked him with a frown.

"Let's just say I have something important to announce," Su Yang calmly responded.

"Why can't you just announce it to the public and let it spread naturally? That'll be much more convenient than summoning every family in the Eastern Continent." Lord Xie said to him.

"Because it'll leave a stronger impact if it's done that way." Su Yang said.

He then continued, "Well? Can you do it or not? I'll even give you a Heaven Transcendence Pill as a bonus."

"What? Heaven Transcendence Pill? How do you have something like that? And why are you making it sound like I have already lost?" Lord Xie frowned.

Hearing his words, Su Yang pointed in a certain direction and spoke in a calm voice, "The seal is 23 meters from where I am standing."

"..."

Lord Xie turned to look at the place Su Yang was pointed at and sure enough, that's where the seal usually appears.

"How..." Lord Xie stared at Su Yang with his eyes wide as saucers. Does he really have the ability to see the seal? How did he do it when even the most talented formation experts in the world working together cannot figure it out?

"How I can see the formation is not important right now. Are you going to honor our bet and summon the families and sects or not? It's either that or you run around the city while n.a.k.e.d." Su Yang said to him.

"..."

Lord Xie immediately became speechless. He never even agreed to anything, as Su Yang had won the bet before they could even settle on it!

After a moment of silence, he finally spoke in a defeated voice, "You just want me to call for a summoning, right?"

"That's right. You can pick the place and time, but make sure it won't take longer than 9 months."

"I swear to the Heavens, Su Yang. If you are going to do something that'll ruin my image..." Lord Xie stared at him with narrowed eyes.

Seeing his threatening gaze, Su Yang merely shrugged and said, "Don't worry, it has nothing to do with you and everything to do with myself."

Sometime later, Liu Lanzhi spoke to him, "Should I even bother asking why you want to gather so many people?"

Su Yang smiled at her and said, "It's for my farewell party."

"Your... what?" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with raised eyebrows, clearly puzzled by his words.

"You'll understand when the time comes."

Sometime later, Lord Xie approached Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples and said to them, "There's about an hour before the seal appears, and I want to take this time to explain to you what's going to happen when that happens."

He then retrieved a few plain-looking talismans from his storage pouch and handed them to Liu Lanzhi and the disciples, "First and foremost, these talismans will tell you when your time is almost up, so when it activates, you must stop cultivating and leave the Celestial Pond, or you'll be stuck inside for 100 years."

Chapter 640 - Opening the Formation Early

"Once you go inside the portal, use your spiritual energy to activate these talismans. When the talisman activates seven days later, you will have exactly 60 seconds to stop cultivating and run out of the portal that's only a few meters away from the Celestial Pond, giving you plenty of time to leave." Lord Xie explained as he handed them the talismans.

"I cannot stress this enough but if you do not leave the place in time, you will be stuck in there for 100 years and not even Heaven can save you then."

Liu Lanzhi and the disciples swallowed nervously at his grave warning. They cannot imagine being stuck inside one place for 100 years, and even worse, unable to embrace Su Yang for 100 years.

A few moments later, Lord Xie continued, "Once the seal appears and you can see the portal, immediately jump into it and you will be transported into this empty world where only the Celestial Pond exists. Remember, the portal will remain open for exactly seven days, and you can leave the place at any time during the seven days, but you'll lose valuable time if you do so, so I recommend you stay inside until the very last minute."

"Now for the most important thing about the Celestial Pond... You MUST cultivate inside the Celestial Pond in order to take advantage of the treasure. It will not work if you cultivate outside or around it."

"Do you have any questions or something you don't understand?"

Liu Lanzhi and the others shook their heads.

"Good, then we only have to wait for the Celestial Pond to open in an hour."

However, Su Yang quickly interrupted him and said, "You won't need to wait an hour, since it will be opening in 5 minutes."

"What?" Lord Xie turned to look at him with wide eyes.

"The formation is already activated; it should reveal itself in a few minutes."

"How is that possible? The Celestial Pond has always opened at the same time since ancient times! Why would it open an hour earlier than normal this time?" Lord Xie said to him, clearly doubting his words.

Seeing Lord Xie's frown and doubtful gaze, Su Yang spoke with a smile on his handsome face, "Did you forget what I said yesterday? You don't have to wait 100 years for the formation to open. Since the thing protecting the Celestial Pond is not a natural phenomenon but a formation, as long as one has the ability, they can open or close the formation as they please."

"What!? Does this mean—"

Before Lord Xie could even get his hopes up, Su Yang shook his head and said, "Just because you have the means to open the door does not mean whatever's inside that door will always be available for you. The Celestial Pond is not infinite— once you use up its resources, it will naturally require time to recover itself."

"..."

Lord Xie had nothing to say after hearing Su Yang's words, as what he said made clear sense. If one were to scoop out all of the water in a lake, one must wait for the river to refill the lake with water before it can be used again.

"While that is true, what if the Celestial Pond takes less than 100 years to recover? Even if it takes 90 years to recover, if we can open the portal and enter the Celestial Pond as we please, that's 10 years less that we have to wait every time we want to cultivate in the Celestial Pond." Xie Wang suddenly said.

"That is true," Su Yang nodded after hearing Xie Wang's words, and he continued, "However, who in this world has the capabilities to open the formation when even the top formation experts cannot see the formation itself? You might as well ask mortals to start flying."

"..."

Xie Wang was speechless. Indeed, who could possibly open the formation when only Su Yang can see the thing?

"What about you? You were able to tinker with the formation and make it open an hour earlier than scheduled. Surely you must have the capability to open the formation as you please." Lord Xie said with his gaze locked onto Su Yang, who wore a casual smile on his face.

"Indeed, this level of formation is nothing in my eyes and I can open it as I please. However, do I look like a freaking doorman to you? I don't have the time to open the formation for you every time you feel like going inside."

"It'll only be tedious at first, but once we figure out how long it'll take for the Celestial Pond to recover, you'll only need to open it whenever it recovers, and we'll even pay you for it." Lord Xie said to him.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I won't be able to do it even if you offered me the world, as I will not be around in the future."

"What do you mean by that, Su Yang? Are you going somewhere?" Xie Xingfang suddenly asked him with a small frown between her brows.

He nodded, "Yes, I have a place that I need to be in the future and I don't know when I'll return if I will ever return, but this is not the proper time for the conversation."

He then turned to look at the formation and said, "The formation is opening. Get ready to go inside."

Once Liu Lanzhi and the disciples heard his words, they prepared to move at a moment's notice.

Crack *Crack* *Crack*

The empty air suddenly cracked like a broken mirror, and a massive hole appeared in the crack a few moments later, revealing a purple portal that emitted an otherworldly inside.

"Go inside now!" Lord Xie suddenly shouted at them.

Hearing his voice, Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples quickly reacted by approaching the hole in the air before jumping into the portal and disappearing from the Eastern Continent.

Chapter 641 - Returning to the Holy Central Continent

After entering the portal, Liu Lanzhi and the others found themselves in this purple and pinkish world that appeared to be made of clouds, and even the ground they were standing on was made of clouds.

"What a mythical place..." Liu Lanzhi mumbled in a dazed voice.

The other disciples were also dazed for a moment before Yan Yan's voice quickly snapped them out of their daze, "The Celestial Pond is over there."

They turned to look at the direction Yan Yan was pointing at, and sure enough, there was a small pond of sparkling golden water with a massive golden tree rooted directly right beside the pond.

This tree trunk appeared to be made of pure silver, whilst the leaves were coated in a golden color, making it look like a luxurious decoration more than a real tree. Furthermore, if one looked closely, the leaves on the tree were dripping drops of golden liquid into the Celestial Pond.

"The Celestial Pond is actually a tree?" Liu Lanzhi was dumbfounded to learn this, and she wanted to admire the beautiful scenery more, but alas, she did not have the luxury to stand around.

"Let's hurry up and start cultivating!" Liu Lanzhi said to the disciples before entering the Celestial Pond and sitting in the lotus position in the golden water, which was only deep enough to reach and cover half of her b.r.e.a.s.ts.

However, for someone with a short figure like Yan Yan, the water depth was enough to touch her chin.

Once they were all in the cultivating position, they began to absorb the Profound Qi there, which was richer and denser than anything they've ever experienced before, feeling like they were drinking fresh water for the first time when they have only drunk muddy water before.

And because of Su Yang's Yang Qi inside their body, their cultivation base was improving at a crazy rate that would otherwise not be possible even with the Celestial Pond.

Meanwhile, outside the Celestial Pond, Su Yang said to Xie Wang and Lord Xie, "Now that they have departed, it's time we leave for the Holy Central Continent, too."

The two of them immediately nodded with flickering eyes.

'Oh! How long have I waited for this moment!?' Xie Wang cried inwardly, feeling like a child who's going to the festival for the first time.

"I would also like to go with you but I have to watch this place just in case there are intruders." Xie Xingfang said to him with a bitter smile.

"If you are worried about intruders, I can simply protect this place with a formation so nobody can enter." Su Yang said to her.

"Really? I can come with you to the Holy Central Continent?" Xie Xingfang looked at him with a pleasantly surprised face.

"Of course," he nodded.

Su Yang then created a defensive and concealing formation around the portal, ensuring that nobody would disturb the people cultivating in the Celestial Pond.

"Are you all ready to leave?" He asked them afterward.

"Yes!"

They all nodded their heads.

"Good."

Su Yang retrieved Qiuyue's massive flying boat that he'd borrowed from her before leaving the Profound Blossom Sect and tossed it into the air.

The flying boat expanded in the air until it was the size of a warship.

"What are you waiting for? Get on." Su Yang said to them after boarding the boat.

"No matter how many times I see this treasure, it always leaves me speechless." Xie Wang spoke in an admiring voice as his gaze stared intensively at the domineering ship before him.

A few moments later, once everyone was on the ship, Su Yang used his Profound Qi to fuel the flying ship. However, because his cultivation base is nowhere near as powerful as Qiuyue's cultivation base, it will take them much longer to reach the Holy Central Continent, even requiring Su Yang to take breaks.

"Do you need our help?" Xie Wang asked him during their second break.

"Only those who have been approved by Qiuyue can use this spiritual treasure, or it will reject your spiritual energy." Su Yang said to them.

"How long do you think it'll take to reach the Holy Central Continent?" Lord Xie asked him.

"Two days give or take," he responded.

"What if we transfer our Profound Qi to you, Su Yang? Our spiritual energy can be used to recover your own, which should be okay, right?" Xie Xingfang suddenly suggested.

"Hmm... I guess that would work, but it'll only shorten the journey by a few hours."

"Even if it will save only a few minutes, I still want to be of some help to you. I can't let you sweat alone while we do nothing." Xie Xingfang said.

Hearing her sincere voice, Su Yang nodded and sat down in the lotus position.

Xie Xingfang then walked and sat behind him, before putting her hands on his back and transferring her spiritual energy to his Dantian through her palms.

"..."

Lord Xie and Xie Wang looked at each other with an embarrassed look on their faces. To think Xie Xingfang would be the first one to offer Su Yang help while having the lowest cultivation out of them. It made them feel ashamed.

An hour later, Xie Xingfang's back was soaked in sweat.

"I think... this is my limit..." she said to him with sweat dripping down her face.

"Get some rest; I'll take your place." Xie Wang said to her.

"Un." Xie Xingfang nodded before moving to another location to recover her own spiritual energy.

'Heavens! This is exhausting my spiritual energy at a ridiculous rate! No wonder why Xing'er exhausted her spiritual energy in only an hour! How on earth does Su Yang keep this up for so long while being only at the Heavenly Spirit Realm!? Does he have an unlimited supply of Profound Qi in his body or something?!' Xie Wang cried inwardly, shocked by how much spiritual energy was required to fuel the flying treasure.

Chapter 642 - The Reason I Like You

"I am at my limit... switch with me..." Xie Wang turned to look at Lord Xie after exhausting his spiritual energy in four hours, lasting only slightly longer than Xie Xingfang despite being at the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

'Haaaa... This will be my first time transferring my own spiritual energy to someone else, and to think it'd be Su Yang of all people...' Lord Xie sighed inwardly. However, he was not in any position to decline, as Su Yang's the only reason he's going to fulfill his dream of traveling to the Holy Central Continent.

A few moments later, Lord Xie swapped places with Xie Wang and began transferring his spiritual energy to Su Yang.

'Good lord! This spiritual energy consumption rate is ridiculous! At this rate, I'll exhaust myself in two hours!' Lord Xie was immediately alerted by the speed his Profound Qi was disappearing at, feeling as though he was feeding a bottomless pit with his spiritual energy.

And just like he'd predicted, two hours later, Lord Xie was near emptying all of his spiritual energy from his Dantian.

"This is the most I can assist you for now..." Lord Xie said as he stopped transferring his Profound Qi to Su Yang.

"I can handle the rest myself," Su Yang casually nodded.

"You are one hell of a crazy bastard, Su Yang. You know that, right?" Lord Xie said to him afterward, and he continued, "If not for the fact that you were born in the Su Family, I would've mistaken you as an otherworldly being who does not belong to this world and came from the starry sky."

"..." Su Yang remained silent for a moment before speaking, "You are not too far off, actually."

"Eh?" Lord Xie looked at him with wide eyes, and even Xie Wang and Xie Xingfang stopped cultivating to stare at him with shocked expressions on their faces. What the hell did Su Yang mean when he said that?

"Well, there's no harm in telling you now since the truth will be revealed sooner or later." Su Yang stopped the flying ship and stood up.

He then looked at the Xie Family and spoke with a serious but calm expression on his face, "I may have been born in this world, but this is not my first life, as I have memories of my previous life from another world as an Immortal."

"..."

After a long moment of silence, Xie Wang spoke in a trembling voice, "Y-Y-You mean... like reincarnation...?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Although I do not know if it was really reincarnation or not, we might as well see it as such."

He then retrieved an Appearance Reforming Pill and swallowed it.

A moment later, his appearance changed, becoming more handsome and mature.

"My physical body may only be 18 years old, but I have been alive for thousands of years..."

After a few more moments of silence, Lord Xie began laughing out loud, "N-No wonder why you are so powerful at such a young age! I knew it was impossible for someone to have such otherworldly talents! Does this mean Hong Yu'er is also the reincarnation of an Immortal, and she has retained the memories of her previous life!?"

"No, Hong Yu'er's situation is a little bit special, but she's without a doubt a normal human that was born in this world," Su Yang said, and he continued, "However, just because I have an advantage with my Immortal memories does not mean such talents cannot exist. Although you are not aware, there are countless geniuses from where I'm from that can turn your views of the cultivation world upside down with their talents."

"W-What about those two goddesses?! Are they also Cultivators from your world?!" Xie Wang asked him, feeling as though he was experiencing enlightenment with so much otherworldly information.

"Un." Su Yang nodded.

"Unbelievable... to think there actually exist other worlds beyond this sky..." Xie Wang looked at the clear sky with a dazed face.

"Su Yang... when you say that you will be leaving this place in the future and that you might not return, are you saying that you will be returning to your world— the world you came from?" Xie Xingfang spoke for the first time.

"That's right. Are you disappointed after learning the truth? That I am not some genius young man like you had thought?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

However, Xie Xingfang quickly shook her head and said, "That's wrong, Su Yang! I am not disappointed! Although I do not know how to explain this feeling in my heart right now, it's definitely not disappointment!"

And she continued after taking a deep breath, "What I like about you— The reason I like you, Su Yang, is not because of your talent. The reason I like you, Su Yang, is because of the way you talk to me and the way you look at me. I like your calm and soothing voice when you are speaking to me, and I like how you can look directly into my eyes so gently. You are the only person who can stare at me without making me feel uncomfortable. In fact, I like it when you look at me with those clear eyes."

"Therefore, even if you weren't a genius who can dominate the cultivation world, I would still..." Xie Xingfang suddenly stopped her sentence, not daring to continue any further, fearing that she might really fall in love with him if she did.

Meanwhile, Lord Xie and Xie Wang were staring at her with gawking expressions on their faces, not daring to believe what they'd just heard. Although Xie Xingfang did not finish her sentence, even an idiot with no experience in romance would be able to tell what she wanted to say.

As for Su Yang, he held a gentle smile on his face this entire time, and he spoke a moment later, "I am flattered by your feelings, and if you ever feel like continuing that sentence, I will always be willing to listen."

"Un..." Xie Xingfang nodded with her face flushed with redness, as this is probably the most embarrassing thing she has ever said to anyone in her life.

Chapter 643 - A Frog in a Well

"What? You guys don't have any questions regarding my background as an Immortal? I expected to be flooded by questions, you know?" Su Yang said to them sometime later.

"Uhh..."

Xie Wang and Lord Xie exchanged awkward glances with each other. Now that they are aware of Su Yang's real identity, they no longer dare to speak with him so casually, especially knowing that he's an Immortal with countless more experience than them.

"I know you have some questions. Go ahead and ask— I won't bite." Su Yang said, even urging them to question him for some reason.

"T-Then I have a question for you..." Xie Wang raised his hand like an obedient disciple during lectures, "What did you do in your previous life? What exactly does it mean to be an 'Immortal'?"

"What did I do, huh? The short answer is that I traveled the world as a Dual Cultivator in search of beauties to cultivate with," he casually responded.

'He was also a Dual Cultivator in his past life? No, even more shocking is that one can become an Immortal from dual cultivation?!' Xie Wang cried inwardly, as he didn't expect that Dual Cultivators would be able to go so far in the path of cultivation.

"As for what it means to be an Immortal— I don't really know what to tell you. Immortals are no different than Cultivators except the fact that they have near inexhaustible longevity."

"You mean to tell me that true immortality exists?! That one can live forever!?" Xie Wang spoke in a loud voice filled with excitement.

"Only very few things in this world can truly exist 'forever', but no Immortal has died of old age ever since cultivation was introduced to the world countless years ago, and plenty of Immortals have survived for tens of millions of years, hence why I said 'near' inexhaustible longevity, as you'll die from other causes before you die from old age." Su Yang explained to him.

"Then what does it take for one to become an Immortal? How much more do I have to cultivate in order to achieve immortality?" Xie Wang asked him with a hopeful gaze.

However, Su Yang merely chuckled at his words and said, "You'll die long before you can even become an Immortal in this place because of the lack of spiritual energy in this world. Though, since you asked, I will broaden your views today and let you know just how insignificant you truly are..."

Su Yang cleared his throat and continued, "While the Sovereign Spirit Realm may be considered the peak of cultivation in this world, it's actually nothing impressive in my world, as Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivators are still considered as mere Mortals."

"What?! I am still a Mortal?!" Xie Wang's jaw dropped to the floor after hearing his words. Just how many more realms are above the Sovereign Spirit Realm!?

Su Yang nodded and said, "The Sovereign Spirit Realm exists within the Seven Mortal Spirit Realms— the Elementary Spirit Realm, Profound Spirit Realm, True Spirit Realm, Earth Spirit Realm, Heavenly Spirit Realm, Sovereign Spirit Realm, and finally, Divine Spirit Realm."

"Above the Divine Spirit Realm is the Five Divine Realms that consists of the Divine Origin Realm, Divine Lord Realm, Divine Sovereign Realm, Divine Saint Realm, and Divine Emperor Realm. Entering the Five Divine Realm is your first step into becoming a true Cultivator."

"After surpassing the Divine Emperor Realm, you will enter the Four Ancient Realm, where you'll be considered as a half-Immortal. The Four Ancient Realm consists of the Ancient Sovereign Realm, Ancient Saint Realm, Ancient Emperor Realm, and Ancient Immortal Realm. And in order to become an Immortal, you must reach the Ancient Emperor Realm. Do you understand how far away you are now?" Su Yang asked Xie Wang, who sat there with a blank expression, clearly overwhelmed by the information he'd just learned.

"Seven Mortal Spirit Realms, Five Divine Realms, and Four Ancient Realms... I am truly what one would call a 'frog in a well'..." Xie Wang sighed with a dispirited look on his face, as he didn't expect the Cultivation path to be this vast and profound.

"I have spent over 1 thousand years to reach my current Cultivation, and you're now telling me that I am not even considered as a real Cultivator in your world? That I am only a mere Mortal? What kind of joke

is this?" Xie Wang continued to sigh multiple times in a quick session, losing all desire to improve his cultivation any further.

"..."

Seeing Xie Wang's negative reaction, Su Yang decided to keep the other realms above the Four Ancient Realms to himself, as learning it now would only further break Xie Wang's cultivation spirit.

"Cultivation is more than just about increasing your longevity. Although cultivating for longevity is not necessarily a bad thing, as most people cultivate to live a longer life, they usually have other reasons that make them into Cultivators." Su Yang said to Xie Wang a moment later.

"I know... I know that... but to think I have been so full of myself for reaching the Sovereign Spirit Realm when I am actually..." Xie Wang sighed again.

Su Yang shook his head, thinking it would be for the best to leave Xie Wang alone for now.

He then looked at Lord Xie and asked him, "What about you? Do you have any questions for me?"

"No... Not really..." Lord Xie quickly shook his head.

"Then I have a question for you, Su Yang." Xie Xingfang suddenly said to him.

Su Yang looked at her and waited for her question.

"When you say that you'll be leaving this place in the future, do you already have a method of returning to your own world, or are you only planning to return?"

"There is already a way for me to return to my own world but it's not guaranteed, and there are many risks involved in this method. However, I am willing to take these risks if I can return, as I still have many things to accomplish in that world," Su Yang said to her.

"I see..." Xie Xingfang nodded and began to ponder in silence.

Sometime later, Su Yang began feeding the flying ship his Profound Qi again, resuming their journey to the Holy Central Continent.

Chapter 644 - Heavenly Spiritual Roots

Somewhere in the Holy Central Continent, a man wearing black armor kneeled before a middle-aged man wearing luxurious robes that resembled that of royalty.

"Your Majesty, we have spotted a flying ship approaching our continent, and it seems to be the one used by Immortal Fairy Su Yue." The man in black armor reported.

"Immortal Fairy Su Yue? It has been over a year since she last made her appearance." The middle-aged man spoke in a calm voice.

"What should we do?" The armored man asked before suggesting, "Should we greet her?"

"No, do not approach her. Immortal Fairy Su Yue does not like being approached by others— if she needs something, she will approach you. We will simply sit back and see what she's going to do before we do anything. Maybe she'll disappear soon like her previous visit."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

"What about the matter regarding Patriarch Gold? Do we have any news on his disappearance?" The middle-aged man then asked.

"We have spoken with a few people at the Golden Lion Academy, and they said that Patriarch Gold had left the continent. However, we are still unsure about his destination. He also took with him a few Heavenly Spirit Realm experts, so we can assume that he's not traveling a short distance."

"Why on earth would Patriarch Gold leave the continent? And it's been an entire year since his disappearance. How far did he travel? Is he even still alive? The Jade Sea is no joke even for someone as powerful as him." The middle-aged man sighed. The Golden Lion Academy has been moving at a steep decline ever since the incident that nearly destroyed the entire sect.

"This is only an assumption, but we believe that Patriarch Gold is traveling to one of the other four continents." The man in the black armor suddenly spoke.

"Are you certain about that? He should know that without my permission, nobody can travel to the other continents."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

"Let me know if Patriarch Gold appears again. I need to have a word with him." The middle-aged man said with a frown on his face.

Meanwhile, back at the flying ship, Su Yang said to the Xie Family, "We will arrive at the Holy Central Continent in about six hours."

"Six hours... I will finally get to see for myself 'Cultivator's Paradise' in six hours..." Lord Xie mumbled to himself with his body trembling from excitement.

However, Xie Wang merely continued to stare at the empty space with a dazed look on his face.

"I don't want to ruin your mood but calling the Holy Central Continent 'Cultivator's Paradise' is an exaggeration. The only difference between the Holy Central Continent and the Eastern Continent is the overall level of its Cultivators. While the Eastern Continent lacks Cultivators at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, the Holy Central Continent has plenty of them, and that is only because they have a higher quality of Profound Qi."

"Anyway, we came here for the Four Element Roots, and I can only think of one place that might have this medicine— the Four Seasons Academy— the top medicine sect on the continent."

"The top sect...?" Lord Xie immediately frowned, and he asked a moment later, "How valuable is the Four Elements Root, anyway? I have brought some resources just in case we have to trade, but if it's too expensive..."

"Well, it's nothing special in my eyes, but in this world, where resources are scarce, I can imagine it being quite valuable," Su Yang said.

Seeing the worried expression on his face, Su Yang continued, "Don't worry, even if they don't have the Four Elements Root, there are plenty of other resources that can be used as a substitute at the cost of lowering the pill's effect."

Six hours later, they can finally see land and trees in the distance.

"The Holy Central Continent!" Lord Xie stared at the place with wide eyes, looking as though he was trying to crave the scenery into his soul so that he'll never forget.

"So this place really existed..." Even Xie Wang regained some of his energy and spirit after seeing the legendary land for the first time.

"The Profound Qi in this place is simply astonishing..." Xie Xingfang spoke in a surprised voice. "I can feel my Cultivation improving just by breathing it."

"It's no wonder why there are so many Heavenly Spirit Realm experts in this place. If I got to cultivate this quality of Profound Qi every day, I would've long entered the Sovereign Spirit Realm." Xie Wang sighed loudly.

"There's something I don't understand, Su Yang. The Holy Central Continent and the Eastern Continent both exist in the same world, yet why is there such a vast difference in the quality of our Profound Qi?" Xie Xingfang suddenly asked him.

Lord Xie and Xie Wang also turned to look at him after hearing Xie Xingfang's question, as they have never thought about this themselves.

"Good question." Su Yang nodded before continuing, "Think of it like this— just because you live in the same house as someone doesn't necessarily mean your rooms will look exactly the same with the same atmosphere, and it's mostly the furniture and decorations that make the difference. In this case, the furniture is the natural resources that exist in each continent."

"In simpler terms, the reason why the Holy Central Continent has a higher quality of Profound Qi than the Eastern Continent is simply that they have more natural treasures than us. Not only that, below the Holy Central Continent exists something called Heavenly Spiritual Roots that enhances their Profound Qi."

"Heavenly Spiritual Roots also exist below the Eastern Continent, but it's not as strong as the ones here, hence the difference between our spiritual energy."

"Heavenly Spiritual Roots...? Heaven, this is my first time hearing this term!" Lord Xie exclaimed.

"If that's the case, what happens if the Heavenly Spiritual Roots are damaged or destroyed?" Xie Wang suddenly asked him.

"Then the Profound Qi in that area will immediately decline in quality and quantity. In your case, it would be the entire Eastern Continent," he calmly responded.

Chapter 645 - Purple Bell Poison Flower

"What!? That would be disastrous!" Lord Xie quickly said, and he continued, "We will need to find a method to effectively protect the Heavenly Spiritual Root when we return!"

"I don't think you have to worry about that," Su Yang said to him.

"Why not?" Lord Xie looked at him with a puzzled face.

"Because the Heavenly Spiritual Roots exist deep underground, and even if you somehow manage to dig to the Heavenly Spiritual Roots, I doubt any of you would be able to damage it."

"Heavenly Spiritual Roots are not your ordinary tree roots, and unless your cultivation is at the Ancient Realm, you can forget about even scratching the roots."

"Really? That's relieving..." Lord Xie sighed afterward. He cannot imagine what would happen to the Eastern Continent if their Heavenly Spiritual Roots are destroyed. If their Profound Qi suddenly declines in quality and quantity, perhaps reaching the Heavenly Spirit Realm would no longer be possible, much less the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

"Well, there are spiritual treasures that can destroy Heavenly Spiritual Roots, but I also doubt someone would purposefully destroy the Heavenly Spiritual Roots since you are living in a small place." Su Yang said.

And he continued, "Even in my world, which is at least a thousand times larger than this world and spacious enough to contain multiple Heavenly Spiritual Roots, no sane Cultivator would purposefully harm Heavenly Spiritual Roots without a good reason, and even if they have a good reason, they risk offending every Cultivator in the world by destroying the roots, which is considered taboo."

"As long as you don't reveal its existence to the public, it is very unlikely that anyone would discover the Heavenly Spiritual Roots that dwell deep within the earth, much less destroy them."

"Anyway, we have arrived at the Holy Central Continent. Let me restore my cultivation before we head to the Four Seasons Academy."

Su Yang then landed the flying ship near the shore before tossing it inside his storage ring.

"Do you mind if I take a look around in the meantime?" Xie Wang asked him afterward.

"Go ahead. Just don't go too far and return here in 3 hours," Su Yang said to him almost like he was speaking to a child at the park.

"I am also going to look around." Lord Xie said before flying away.

"..."

Once they were alone, Xie Xingfang quickly began feeling nervous, mostly because of her confession for him.

"If you want, you can also look around." Su Yang said to her as he sat down and began cultivating.

"I'll stay here with you," she shook her head before taking a seat behind him.

'Although I am interested in the Holy Central Continent, that's not the only reason I followed you here...' she said inwardly with a bittersweet smile on her face.

Three hours later, Xie Wang and Lord Xie returned to their side.

"Su Yang, look at what I found! I have never seen this kind of treasure before but it's rich with Profound Qi!" Xie Wang showed him a weird-looking herb with an excited face, looking like a child who found a toy in the streets.

Su Yang glanced at the blue herb and said, "That's an Azure Tiger Flower; it's used to concoct some Earth-grade pills."

"What about this purple-looking plant?" Lord Xie showed him the purple plant with a glowing flower that resembled the shape of a bell.

"That's a Purple Bell Poison Flower; it's poisonous."

"Ah!? Why didn't you tell me that sooner?!" Lord Xie immediately threw the plant to the side with a terrified look on his face.

Seeing this, Su Yang shook his head and went to pick up the Purple Bell Poison Flower, surprising Lord Xie. He then tossed the plant into his storage ring and continued to speak, "Although it contains poison, the Purple Bell Poison Flower is a rare and valuable treasure with many uses. Compared to the Azure Tiger Flower, it's at least 10 times more valuable, and to think you'd throw something like that away—what a waste of resource. And since you don't want it, I'll take it off your hands."

"..."

Lord Xie stared at him with wide eyes filled with disbelief. He definitely and deliberately used the poison to scare him into throwing the treasure away!

And before Lord Xie could even complain, Su Yang spoke, "Anyway, I have recovered my spiritual energy. We can continue our journey to Four Seasons Academy."

A moment later, Su Yang retrieved the smaller flying ship and boarded it.

"There's not much room, so you'll have to sit close to each other," Su Yang said to them.

Lord Xie and Xie Wang looked at each other before looking at Xie Xingfang.

They then boarded the flying ship and sat right beside each other without opening their mouth, leaving the seat beside Su Yang to Xie Xingfang.

"..." Xie Xingfang immediately blushed at their obvious intentions. However, she did not say anything and sat beside Su Yang.

Once Xie Xingfang sat down, Su Yang could feel her soft body pressing against his side, and the sweet yet subtle fragrance on her body gave a calming effect.

"Excuse me, Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang said to him with a rosy face.

"Don't mind it," he responded with a smile on his face.

A few moments later, the flying ship soared to the sky and approached the Four Seasons Academy.

Once they reached the Four Seasons Academy sometime later, Su Yang landed the flying ship right in front of their sect.

"We're here," he said to the Xie Family as he stowed the flying ship into his storage ring.

Lord Xie and Xie Wang nodded with a serious expression on their face while Xie Xingfang wore a veil over her face.

They approached the gates a moment later.

Meanwhile, the guards were puzzled and surprised when they saw Su Yang and the Xie Family approaching their sect.

"Three Heavenly Spirit Realm experts and there's even someone at the Sovereign Spirit Realm with them! Who are they?!"

"I don't know! I have never seen that old man at the Sovereign Spirit Realm before!"

"Quick! Someone notify the Sect Leader!"

Chapter 646 - Legendary Pill Recipe

"Sect Master Zhu! This is an emergency! We have four visitors, three Heavenly Spirit Realm experts, and one Sovereign Spirit Realm master! However, we don't recognize any of them!" The messenger rushed to the Sect Master's building to notify her of Su Yang's arrival.

"What? How can you not recognize someone at the Sovereign Spirit Realm? There are only a handful of experts at the Sovereign Spirit Realm, and you mean to tell me that you don't recognize this person!?" Sect Master Zhu quickly lectured this disciple.

"Sect Master, I know the face of every Cultivator at the Sovereign Spirit Realm, but I really don't recognize this one! It's an old man at the first level Sovereign Spirit Realm!"

"An old man at the first level Sovereign Spirit Realm?" Sect Master Zhu raised her eyebrows upon hearing this information, as she also doesn't recall any old man at that level.

"Did you ask for their names?" she then asked.

"Yes, three of them belong to a family with the surname 'Xie', and the last one was named Su Yang." The disciple said.

"Surnamed Xie and Su— Huh?" The Sect Master instantly stopped talking, and she stared at the disciple with wide eyes and a gawking expression, looking as though she just witnessed the impossible.

"W-W-W-What was the name of that last person? R-Repeat it for me again," she spoke in a stuttering voice, not daring to believe her ears.

"Umm... I believe he called himself 'Su Yang'..." The disciple responded with a nervous look after seeing the Sect Master's reaction.

And suddenly—

Bang!

The disciple watched in horror when Sect Master Zhu stood up and flew out of the closed window, creating an ugly hole in the wall.

"Sect Master?!" The disciple immediately rushed to the window and called out to her, but alas, she was long gone.

Meanwhile, at the Four Seasons Academy's entrance, Su Yang and the Xie Family casually waited outside while one of the disciples went to notify Sect Master Zhu of his arrival.

"Don't you know them, Su Yang? Why do we have to wait like this if you knew them?" Lord Xie asked him.

"Hm? I only know a few individuals from this place," he casually responded.

"..." Lord Xie was beginning to worry if the Four Seasons Academy would even listen to their request, much less give them the Four Elements Root.

Just as Lord Xie began worrying, they could feel a powerful aura approaching their location at immense speed.

"What a strong aura! This expert must be at the Sovereign Spirit Realm!" Lord Xie expressed surprise.

"This is my second time seeing another individual who's at the Sovereign Spirit Realm! And this person's aura feels even stronger than that bastard!" Xie Wang was greatly surprised that he would meet someone stronger than Patriarch Gold so quickly.

"T-That is the Sect Master! The Sect Master is approaching us!" The disciples stationed at the gate immediately lined up in an orderly fashion and patiently waited for Sect Master Zhu's arrival.

A few moments later, they bowed to the figure that descended before them, "Greetings, Sect Master Zhu!"

However, Sect Master Zhu ignored them and immediately approached Su Yang.

"Oh my... Oh my goodness! It's really you, Su Yang!" Sect Master Zhu grabbed his shoulders with trembling hands and teary eyes.

"Are you okay...?" Su Yang was baffled by her reaction, who looked like she was meeting her long lost son for the first time in years.

"I'm fine— perfectly fine! It's just that I never thought I'd ever see you again after your departure!" she said after wiping her tears.

"Anyway, what brings you back to this place? Are you perhaps here to see Zhu Mingyi?" she looked at him with a hopeful gaze.

He nodded and said, "Yes, along with a few other matters."

"Please! Let's talk elsewhere— somewhere more comfortable!"

Sect Master Zhu then led Su Yang and the Xie Family away, leaving the disciples dumbfounded.

"Who the hell was that young man?! I have never seen the Sect Master acting like that before! She reminded me of my grandmother just now!"

"She even cried! I don't think I will be able to sleep tonight after seeing that!"

Meanwhile, back at the Sect Master building, after everyone sat down, Sect Master Zhu spoke, "Please ignore the broken window, it was an accident."

She then looked at Su Yang and continued, "Zhu Mengyi is currently at the Holy Sword Sect. However, I have already sent her a message regarding your presence, so she should return soon."

"Anyway, what other matters do you have?"

Su Yang then said, "Do you know of a treasure called 'Four Elements Root'? I am looking for it."

"Four Elements Root?" Sect Master Zhu immediately raised her eyebrows in surprise. "Of course, I know of this treasure. In fact, pretty much every Alchemist that exists on this continent is aware of this divine treasure that is rumored to be one of the ingredients for a legendary pill recipe that is said to have the capabilities to revive the dead."

"However, it's an exceedingly rare treasure that is governed by the Emperor himself, so only a few individuals have ever got to see it, much less touch it."

"A legendary pill recipe for reviving the dead? As if something like that exists." Su Yang shook his head, instantly announcing this pill as pure nonsense. While there are many similar legends in the Four Divine Heavens, nobody has ever concocted a pill that can revive the dead— not even the Alchemy God who is known to have the ability to concoct every pill that exists in the universe.

"Regardless of the rumors' authenticity, it is a fact that the Four Elements Root is not something one can easily get their hands on, and if you are looking for it, I can only refer you to the Emperor himself," Sect Master Zhu said to him in a regrettable voice.

"Who is this Emperor? Tell me more about him," Su Yang then said.

Sect Master Zhu nodded her head, and she proceeded to explain everything to him.

Chapter 647 - Emperor Lian

"Emperor Lian is a peak Sovereign Spirit Realm expert and also the ruler of the Holy Central Continent, and his Lian Family has been the number one power on the continent since the ancient times," Sect Master Zhu explained.

"Besides a few rules that they have set for the continent, the Lian Family rarely interacts with the outside world, only acting during extreme and urgent situations. However, that is not to say they know nothing about what's going outside. In fact, it's the complete opposite. The Lian Family keeps track of everything that happens on the continent."

"So they're like you guys," Su Yang turned to look at the Xie Family after hearing Sect Master Zhu's words.

"Eh?" Sect Master Zhu turned to look at the Xie Family before stopping to stare at Xie Wang, and she continued a moment later, "I have been meaning to ask, but who are these people? Although I don't know every Heavenly Spirit Realm expert on the continent, I know everyone who has reached the Sovereign Spirit Realm, yet I have never seen him before."

"Do you want to introduce yourselves or should I do it for you?" Su Yang asked them.

Lord Xie stood up the next second and gave a courteous bow, "Hello, Senior Zhu. My name is Xie Yimu from the Xie Family, and my family currently governs the Eastern Continent."

"Wait... Eastern Continent? You guys came from the Eastern Continent!?" Sect Master Zhu looked at them with wide eyes.

"That's right, and we have always wanted to visit the Holy Central Continent, even treating this place as though it's Cultivators' heaven," Lord Xie said.

"This is my first time meeting with someone from the Eastern Continent," she spoke in a daze.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "What are you talking about? I also came from the Eastern Continent."

"What!? Is that true!?" Sect Master Zhu looked at him with a gawking expression.

Su Yang nodded.

"Unbelievable..." she mumbled.

"Anyway, continuing with the introduction, I am Xie Wang, the Ancestor of the Xie Family and Xie Yimu's father. It's nice to meet you, Fellow Daoist."

"I have heard about the low quality of Profound Qi in the Eastern Continent; it's surprising that someone actually managed to reach the Sovereign Spirit Realm in that place," she said with an interested gaze.

"Hahaha... it took me over a millennium to achieve this cultivation, though..." Xie Wang laughed in a bitter voice.

After the two of them exchanged a few sentences with each other, Xie Xingfang stood up and bowed to her gracefully, "This Junior's name is Xie Xingfang, and I am the only child in my family. It's an honor to meet Senior."

'This girl is definitely a beauty behind that veil!' Sect Master Zhu thought to herself after seeing Xie Xingfang's perfect figure and noble aura.

She then looked at Su Yang, wondering if Xie Xingfang could be his main lover.

"So... you all came here for the Four Elements Root? If I am not being too nosy, can you tell me why you need this treasure?" Sect Master Zhu asked them sometime later.

"Well, it's like this..." Xie Wang proceeded to explain the situation and Xie Xingfang's condition to her.

"A poisoned body? That sounds... very complicated..." Sect Master Zhu spoke with a frown on her face, pitying their situation. "If there's anything I can do to help, just let me know. Though, I doubt you'll be needing me for anything with Su Yang here, especially when it comes to Alchemy. He's definitely the best out there when it comes to Alchemy."

"Wait a second... Alchemy... The best out there?" Lord Xie suddenly frowned upon realizing something.

Su Yang noticed Lord Xie staring at him with wide eyes, seemingly asking him for confirmation. And in response, he merely showed Lord Xie an innocent-looking smile.

'It's him! It's definitely him! The mysterious Alchemy Master who showed up out of the blue! Everything makes sense now! An expert from the Holy Central Continent, my ass! It was you all along, Su Yang!' Lord Xie cried inwardly after realizing the truth to the mysterious Alchemy Master's identity.

Even Xie Xingfang and Xie Wang were looking at him with dumbfounded expressions, as they have also realized the situation. Though, they were not as surprised as Lord Xie, who had personally spoken with him in his disguise.

"Now you understand why we need the Four Elements Roots. Do you think this Emperor Lian would be willing to give it up?" Su Yang asked a moment later.

"I honestly can't say for sure, but since you are related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue..." Sect Master Zhu said.

"Immortal Fairy Su Yue..." A slight smile appeared on Su Yang's face after being reminded of Qiuyue's little alias.

"Anyway, I will set up an appointment with Emperor Lian for you later," Sect Master Zhu said.

Su Yang nodded, and he spoke, "Now that the other matters are out of the way, let's talk about Zhu Mengyi. How has she been doing lately?"

"Oh, Zhu Mengyi is doing great! She has never been happier before, especially after giving birth to your daughter a few months ago!" Zhu Mengyi spoke with a bright smile on her face.

"Hm? Your daughter?" The Xie Family immediately turned to look at Su Yang with wide eyes filled with utter disbelief.

"A daughter, huh?" Su Yang did not react with shock or surprise even after hearing that Zhu Mengyi had given birth to his child, only showing a gentle smile on his face.

"She's also a very healthy child! And she will without a doubt grow up to be as beautiful if not even prettier than her mother in the future, especially since she also has your genes!" Sect Master Zhu nodded her head with pure happiness on her face.

"W-W-Wait a moment... Su Yang... You... You i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed—"

Right as Lord Xie opened his mouth to question Su Yang, the door blasted open, and two beauties rushed into the room with a baby in their grasp.

Chapter 648 - Two Beautiful Daughters

"Su Yang! I cannot believe it! You are really back!" When Zhu Mengyi saw Su Yang, she immediately rushed at him with teary eyes and a child in her arms.

However, she was not the only one who entered the room, as a second beauty entered the room a second later.

"Su Yang!" Wu Jingjing quickly approached him, also with a child in her arms.

"Huh? What are you doing here, Wu Jingjing?" Sect Master Zhu spoke after realizing that Zhu Mengyi did not return alone, as she did not expect Wu Jingjing to appear as well.

But alas, Wu Jingjing was too excited about Su Yang's return to even pay attention to anything else, completely ignoring Sect Master Zhu.

Meanwhile, the Xie Family took a few steps back from shock and bewilderment, looking as though they were still trying to comprehend the situation.

"Zhu Mengyi, Wu Jingjing, it's been a year," Su Yang said to the two beauties with a handsome on his face.

He then looked at the two cute female children in their arms and continued, "Congratulations on giving birth to the little ones. They are beautiful like their mothers."

Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing showed a warm smile on their faces after hearing his words, and Zhu Mengyi spoke a moment later, "Thank you, Su Yang, for giving us such wonderful daughters."

"And thank you for allowing us to bear your child," Wu Jingjing said afterward.

"W-Wait a moment!" Sect Master Zhu suddenly cried out loud. "Wu Jingjing, what do you mean by that!? Your child also belongs to Su Yang?!"

Hearing her shocked voice, Wu Jingjing turned to look at her and nodded, "Sorry for not telling you sooner, Senior Zhu. My father was adamant on keeping it a secret even from you."

"That freaking old man! How dare he keep such a secret from me! I will definitely have a word with him later!" Sect Master Zhu gritted her teeth in anger.

"Mother! Calm down! You are scaring the babies!" Zhu Mengyi quickly warned her.

"Oh, my apologies..."

"Anyway, do you want to hold our daughter?" Zhu Mengyi asked Su Yang afterward.

"If you don't mind," he nodded.

Zhu Mengyi then carefully handed the little girl in her arms to Su Yang, who cradled the girl with slightly trembling hands. Although this is not his first time holding a baby, this is definitely his first time holding his own baby, which made him unexpectedly nervous.

"..."

Su Yang looked at the baby in his arms, and the baby silently stared at him in return, feeling some sort of connection with each other.

"Wow, this is the first time that she's not crying after being held by someone that's not me..." Zhu Mengyi expressed surprise after witnessing her daughter's calmness, and she continued, "Maybe she can somehow tell that you're her father..."

"What is her name, by the way?" Su Yang asked her.

"Zhu Jiayi, hoping that she will have an auspicious life."

"Zhu Mengyi and Zhu Jiayi, huh? I like it," Su Yang nodded.

After holding Zhu Jiayi for a few moments, he noticed a small pair of eyes staring at him intensively, causing him to look at the baby in Wu Jingjing's arms.

"Hahaha... What a pair of sharp gaze— she'll definitely become a powerful swordmaster in the future." Su Yang laughed loudly after seeing this.

"Do you also want me to hold you?" he then asked the baby, who surprisingly responded by wiggling her body.

"Here you go, Su Yang..." Fearing that the baby might wiggle out of her arm, Wu Jingjing quickly passed the baby onto Su Yang before saying, "Her name's Wu Min, as in quick and sharp like a sword."

Once Wu Min was in Su Yang's embrace, she immediately stopped wiggling and silently stared at Su Yang, looking just like Zhu Jiayi.

"Zhu Jiayi and Wu Min... What a mysterious feeling..."

Now with his own creation in each of his arms, Su Yang was experiencing a feeling that he has never felt before.

Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing sat down beside before asking him questions such as:

"Where have you been for the last year and a half, Su Yang?"

"Why did you return to this place?"

"I thought you wouldn't be back for a long, long time."

After listening to their question, Su Yang proceeded to explain to them the situation and that he's actually from the Eastern Continent.

"Unbelievable... To think you were actually from the Eastern Continent..." They covered their mouths in surprise.

"So they must be..."

The two girls turned to look at the Xie Family that had been silently standing in the corner with blank expressions on their faces, and their gaze stopped at Xie Xingfang after seeing her flawless figure, wondering to themselves what her relationship was with Su Yang.

"Uhh... Su Yang... I know you don't owe us any explanations, but would you mind telling us what is happening here?" Xie Wang suddenly asked him.

"What are you confused about?" Su Yang asked them with raised eyebrows, acting ignorantly.

"You... those children... Are they really...?" Xie Wang spoke in a stuttering voice.

"Yes, they are mine. Is there a problem with that?" he casually responded.

"No, but knowing your playboy nature, it's actually quite shocking that you'd be willing to have children." Lord Xie suddenly spoke.

"I know what you mean, but things can always change," Su Yang spoke.

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang remained silent, seemingly in deep thoughts.

Sometime later, Sect Master Zhu said, "Anyway, I am going to write a message for the Lian Family requesting an audience for you. It'll take a day or two at most for a response, but you can stay here in the meantime. I'll also arrange your living quarters."

"Su Yang, you can stay in my living quarters like before," Zhu Mengyi quickly said to him.

"Okay," he nodded.

"Can I also stay with you for a while?" Wu Jingjing asked.

"Of course!" Zhu Mengyi immediately responded.

Chapter 649 - Taking Responsibility

After leaving Sect Master Zhu's room, the Xie Family was led to their temporary living quarters by the disciples whilst Su Yang returned to Zhu Mengyi's living quarters with Wu Jingjing.

"I cannot believe it! Su Yang actually has children! Two of them, at that! And with two different women!" Xie Wang exclaimed after they settled down in their large house.

"He's the last person in the world I'd expect to have children!" Lord Xie also shook his head.

"What do you think about this situation, Xing'er?" Xie Wang asked her a moment later when she remained silent.

"Is it really that shocking that someone as talented and handsome as Su Yang would have children? I'm sure there'll be plenty of willing women lined up if he asked," she responded in a surprisingly calm voice, and she continued, "I am more interested in the mothers. How can they endure having the man they've conceived with impregnating other women and be fine with it, even remaining in a friendly relationship with them. I simply cannot understand their feelings..."

Xie Xingfang shook her head and sighed, "Perhaps if I can understand their feelings I will finally be able to accept Su Yang despite the shortcomings of such a relationship..."

Hearing her words, Xie Wang and Lord Xie remained silent, as they did not know how to respond to such words.

Meanwhile, in Zhu Mengyi's living quarters, Su Yang sat on the bed with his daughters still in his embrace.

"They really like you, Su Yang. So much so that even I am starting to feel jealous," Zhu Mengyi spoke in a joking voice.

A few moments later, Wu Jingjing asked him, "Su Yang, how long do you think you'll be staying in the Holy Central Continent this time?"

"A week at most," he quickly responded. "Once we have the Four Elements Root, we will immediately return to the Eastern Continent and concoct the poison immunity pill. After all, Xing'er's condition is worsening as we speak, and we don't know how long her body will be able to endure the poison."

"That girl... is she your lover?" Zhu Mengyi asked him after gathering her courage.

"No, she's not," he shook his head.

"Really?"

They looked at him with wide eyes.

"Why would I lie to you?" He responded with a smile.

A few minutes later, Su Yang said while looking at the two babies in his embrace, "It appears that the little ones have fallen asleep."

"Let's put them in the other room for now," Zhu Mengyi said.

Su Yang nodded and followed them to another room, where two toddler cribs were already built right next to each other.

Once the children were placed into their beds, Su Yang and the others returned to the other room.

"By the way, I'm surprised the two of you knew each other. What a crazy coincidence that you both wanted to be i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed by me," he said to them with a smile.

"You're telling us that!? You have no idea how shocked we were when we found out that we were i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed by the same man! I almost thought I was dreaming when I learned the truth!" Zhu Mengyi said to him.

"Because of our parents' relationship with each other as the Sect Master of the Three Ancient Academies, we have known each other since we were young. However, it is truly a miracle that our daughters have the same father." Wu Jingjing said afterward.

Su Yang chuckled, "You two sure have a close relationship with each other— to the point where you even cultivated with each other. When did you begin doing it with each other?"

"H-H-How do you know that!?"

They looked at him with a baffled expression.

"I can sense your Yin Qi on each other... Even a blind man can tell if they knew what they were looking for," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Zhu Mingyi and Wu Jingjing exchanged worried looks with each other.

Wu Jingjing then spoke, "Su Yang, we can explain..."

"Explain? What is there to explain?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"Eh? You mean you don't mind it? Us cultivating with each other, I mean..." Zhu Mengyi asked him with wide eyes.

"Of course, not. Why would I mind it if two of my own women have to satisfy each other in my stead because I am not there for them? It's not as if you went to another man. And even if you did, I would not have complained, since I have already stated that I cannot be in your life."

"In fact, it's quite common for women who share the same man to be satisfying each other when the man cannot satisfy them or is absent," Su Yang explained to them, reassuring them that he did not mind them cultivation with each other.

"..."

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi stared at him in silence, seemingly speechless.

"Since we are on the topic, can I ask if either of you has found another partner that's not each other?" Su Yang suddenly asked them.

"N-No way! Besides you, we have only cultivated with each other!" Zhu Mengyi quickly responded.

"You really think we would forget about you that easily, Su Yang? I can still feel the feeling of your hands touching me even now..." Wu Jingjing sighed. "And doing it with Sister Mengyi... she can barely satisfy my l.u.s.t."

"Hey! I am trying my best, okay?! You're asking too much from me if you want me to satisfy you as if I am Su Yang! And I can say the same thing about you, Sister Jingjing!" Zhu Mengyi quickly said to her.

"Anyway, why are you asking, Su Yang?" Wu Jingjing ignored Zhu Mengyi and asked him.

"Well, I have changed a little since I left the Holy Central Continent, and I have given a lot of thought about what I said to you two... that I cannot be with you because of my situation."

"And after some thoughts, I have changed my mind."

"Y-Y-You don't mean..."

They stared at him with gawking expressions with their hearts beating wildly.

Su Yang nodded and continued, "I would've ignored it if you had already found another partner, but since that's not the case, I would like to go back on my previous words and say that I am willing to take responsibility for our children and the two of you, too."

"No way..."

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi gasped in shock before covering their mouths, and their eyes immediately began tearing up once their minds had comprehended Su Yang's words.

"R-Really? You don't mind taking us...?" Zhu Mengyi spoke in a mumbling voice, clearly trying to resist bawling her eyes out.

"You are willing to accept us?" Even Wu Jingjing could barely believe her ears.

Su Yang nodded and continued, "Yes, I am willing to accept both of you. However, you should know a few things about me before you come to a conclusion. If you are willing to accept me for who I am even after learning the truth, I will also do the same."

Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing nodded with serious expressions on their faces and patiently waited for him to continue. However, even if they haven't heard anything yet, they were pretty confident that no matter what Su Yang is about to tell them that they would be willing to accept him.

Chapter 650 - B.r.e.a.s.t Milk

After giving Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi a moment to prepare themselves mentally, Su Yang spoke, "Let's begin with my background. First of all, my body may only be 18 years old, but I am actually much older in reality, as I have memories of my past life. In other words, I have experienced reincarnation, and I used to be an Immortal in my previous life."

"R-Reincarnation...?"

"Immortal in your previous life?"

Both Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing stared at him with wide eyes filled with shock, as they didn't expect such a revelation from Su Yang.

Su Yang calmly nodded his head and continued to speak, "In my previous life, I was a dual cultivator, and I lived in a world that is very far away from this place. Divine Heavens— that was my world, and in that world, Cultivators at the Sovereign Spirit Realm are as abundant as there is grass in this world, and there exist cultivation levels that neither of you could even imagine."

After a moment of silence, Wu Jingjing asked him, "If you don't mind me asking, how did you die in your previous life?"

"To tell you the truth, I don't even know whether I am truly dead or not, as I don't ever recall being 'killed' my previous life. Before I knew it, I was already in this world."

"Now onto the reason why I didn't want to bear responsibility. Although I am now in this world, I do not intend on staying here for the rest of my life, and I already have plans to leave this place and return to my own world in about two years. I have a lot of enemies in the Divine Heavens, and I didn't want to put you or our children at risk, hence why I didn't dare to bring you with me."

"However, after giving it some thought, I have decided to stop being a coward and bring those who wish to be with me to the Divine Heavens. After all, if I cannot even protect the women I love, can I even be called a man?"

"Therefore, I am going to ask you again— Are you willing to come with me to my world? If you are willing, I will accept you into my family."

Su Yang silently waited for their answer.

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi exchanged glances with each other before nodding in silence. They turned to look at Su Yang and spoke simultaneously, "We are willing!"

Hearing their answer, Su Yang nodded with a smile and said, "Before we continue with the customs, allow me to explain to you the family rules."

He then proceeded to explain the rules they must follow as a member of his Su Family.

A few minutes later, he asked them, "I will ask you one last time— are you willing?"

"We are willing!" They responded without hesitation.

"Then let us begin the custom, where I will give you my Family Seal." Su Yang spoke as he began loosening his robes.

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi's eyes immediately flickered with excitement after seeing this, as they have been craving for his love ever since he left.

A few moments later, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi stood before Su Yang with their beautiful body completely n.a.k.e.d, and even though they have given birth not long ago, their bodies remained flawless, looking like they never gave birth in the first place with only one small change— the size of their b.r.e.a.s.ts increasing, which was only natural for women who have given birth before, as their b.r.e.a.s.ts now contained milk.

"Come over here," Su Yang pulled the two beauties towards himself and made the two of them sit on each of his laps.

Once they were sitting on his lap, Su Yang approached Wu Jingjing's b.r.e.a.s.ts with his mouth and began sucking on her pink tip.

"Mmm~!" Wu Jingjing m.o.a.ned softly before speaking with a smile on her face, "What do you think of my b.r.e.a.s.t milk, Su Yang?"

After sucking on her b.r.e.a.s.ts for a few moments, Su Yang spoke with a satisfied smile, "It tastes great. The texture is smooth and creamy while the flavor is subtly sweet. I wouldn't complain if I had to drink this every day."

"Try mine next, Su Yang!" Zhu Mengyi slightly twisted her body, inviting him to suck on her b.r.e.a.s.ts.

Su Yang nodded and licked around her pink circle before sucking on it with force, squeezing her b.r.e.a.s.t milk with his mouth.

"Aaaah~!" Zhu Mengyi m.o.a.ned in a blissful voice.

A few moments later, Su Yang licked his lips and nodded with a satisfied face, "Mmm... it's about the same as Wu Jingjing— I really like it."

"Since you like it that much, go ahead and drink until you are fully satisfied. Just leave some for our children later..." Zhu Mengyi giggled childishly.

Su Yang nodded and wasted no time continuing to feed on their b.r.e.a.s.ts.

Meanwhile, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi worked together to pleasure Su Yang's lower body with Wu Jingjing stroking his divine sword and Zhu Mengyi massaging his jewels with their hands while sitting on his lap.

A few minutes later, Su Yang also released his milk, shooting it all over their bodies and even reaching the ceiling.

"Wow~! There's so much!" Zhu Mengyi exclaimed, feeling hot all over her body.

"Let's not waste it..." Wu Jingjing spoke as she began licking the Yang Qi off Zhu Mengyi's body.

A few moments later, Zhu Mengyi also cleaned Wu Jingjing's body with her mouth.

"I didn't notice this before, but you're already at the Heaven Spirit Realm!? That's ridiculous! You were only at the True Spirit Realm a year ago!" Wu Jingjing exclaimed in a shocked voice after realizing his shocking improvements.

"That cultivation speed is not fair... but what else can we expect from someone who used to be an Immortal in his previous life?" Zhu Mengyi said with a smile on her face.

Sometime later, Su Yang calmly laid on the bed, as it was finally the ladies' turn to drink his milk.

Chapter 651 - Zhu Mengyi's New Technique

Slurp *Slurp* *Slurp*

Wu Jingjing rocked her neck back and forth in a gentle yet intense motion, sucking on Su Yang's meatstick with passion and her eyes filled with hearts.

"Mmm..."

While Wu Jingjing skillfully worked the blade of the sword with her mouth, Zhu Mengyi used her tongue to massage the area below, gently licking his sack of jewels.

"Hmm... the two of you have gotten much better at using your mouth than before. You must have practiced a lot on each other," Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face.

"We cultivated with each other nearly every day before we gave birth," Zhu Mengyi responded.

"However, we barely do it nowadays, as we are too busy with our daughter, and chances like this are rare."

A few more minutes later, Su Yang said to Wu Jingjing who had been working hard to please him, "It's my turn to feed you my milk— get ready."

"Un!"

Wu Jingjing nodded before shoving his entire shaft deep down her throat and patiently waited for the eruption.

A few seconds later, the volcano erupted, and hot Yang Qi exploded from Su Yang's mountain, gushing directly into Wu Jingjing's mouth and down her throat.

"Mmmmmmm!"

Wu Jingjing's eyes widened with surprise as the volume of Yang Qi was much more than she'd anticipated. However, she tried her best to not block the passage in her throat and allowed everything to flow into her stomach, feeling as though she was drinking water without any swallowing motions.

Sometime later, Wu Jingjing removed her mouth from Su Yang's meatstick and spoke with a s.e.xy smile, "I'm so full it feels like I am pregnant again..."

Su Yang chuckled at her words and said, "If you want another child, I will gladly assist."

"I will keep that in mind for the future when I am more experienced as a mother, as I am already overwhelmed by one child..." Wu Jingjing said.

"It's my turn to taste your milk, Su Yang!" Zhu Mengyi suddenly wrapped her mouth around his shaft and began sucking it with the intent of squeezing everything out.

Seeing her aggressiveness, Su Yang was reminded of his time with her inside the cauldron room, where they cultivated with each other for days with barely any breaks in-between.

After sucking for a few minutes, Zhu Mengyi suddenly stopped and said to him, "I'm going to try something new, Su Yang. Don't be scared if you've never experienced it before."

"Hahaha! Scared? Me? And I highly doubt whatever you're about to do will become a new experience for me," Su Yang laughed loudly.

"We'll see..." Zhu Mengyi grinned mysteriously for a brief moment before continuing to suck on Su Yang's shaft.

'What is she going to do?' Wu Jingjing wondered as she stared at Zhu Mengyi intensively.

A few moments later, Zhu Mengyi placed her hands right beneath Su Yang's sack of jewels before she suddenly—

"Ah?! What are you doing, Sister Mengyi!?" Wu Jingjing cried out in a shocked voice when Zhu Mengyi suddenly summoned her Azure Alchemy Flames and wrapped them around Su Yang's sack of jewels as though it was a cauldron.

"Calm down, Sister Jingjing. It won't hurt him," Zhu Mengyi said to her.

"What do you think, Su Yang? Have you ever had your balls warmed by Alchemy Flames? And does it feel good?" she asked him afterward.

"Hmmm..." Su Yang pondered with closed eyes, looking as though he was trying to judge her techniques.

"It's quite clever of you to use your Alchemy Flames in such a manner, but unfortunately for you, it's not my first time experiencing this. With that being said, your control over the temperature and flames is pretty good, and it feels good overall. I can tell that you've continued to work hard even after I left."

"Eh? I'm not the first one who has thought of this? Who else would have thought of using their Alchemy Flames in such a scandalous manner?" Zhu Mengyi asked him in a slightly surprised and disappointed voice.

"Many Alchemists I have cultivated with in my previous life would start using their Alchemy Flames to please me after our second or third time together," he said to her.

"No way..." Zhu Mengyi mumbled.

"As I have said— there is almost nothing I haven't already tried before after living for thousands of years. If you somehow manage to give me a 'new' experience, I'll reward you."

"Really? What kind of reward?"

"It wouldn't be any fun if you knew," Su Yang said with a smile.

Zhu Mengyi nodded with a serious and resolved expression.

She returned to slurping his meatstick with her mouth shortly later and continued to use her Alchemy Flames to massage his jewels.

A few minutes later, Su Yang's volcano erupted again, shooting his white lava into Zhu Mengyi's mouth.

"Mmmm..." Zhu Mengyi closed her eyes so she could fully enjoy this moment and savor the thick liquid before swallowing it without hesitation.

'Ahhh... I have been longing for this sweetness and stickiness in my mouth ever since I first tasted it...' Zhu Mengyi thought to herself, feeling incredibly satisfied.

Once Su Yang removed his meatstick from her mouth, Zhu Mengyi opened her mouth and showed him the small white lake in her mouth for a brief moment before swallowing everything in one motion.

"Ahhh... so tasty..." Zhu Mengyi sighed in a blissful voice and with an enchanting expression on her beautiful face.

When Su Yang saw her amazing expression, his sword trembled before stiffening even more.

He then grabbed Zhu Mengyi by her shoulders and gently laid her on the bed. Seeing the eagerness in Su Yang's eyes, Zhu Mengyi chuckled to herself before spreading her legs wide open for him, revealing to him her wet slit.

Su Yang rubbed his steel-like rod against her pink slit for a good moment before inserting it into the wet hole.

"Ahhhh~!" Zhu Mengyi m.o.a.ned loudly as her inner walls were spread wide open by the monster serpent that invaded her cave, feeling as though she'd entered heaven.

Chapter 652 - Flaming Dragon

"Ahhh! Ahhhh! Aaaaaah~!"

Feeling Su Yang's meatstick in her hole again, all of the stress that had been built up for the past year was instantly satisfied, and Zhu Mengyi felt complete again.

"You are as tight as ever— if not even tighter than before. Are you sure you gave birth not long ago?" Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face as his shaft was being tightly squeezed by Zhu Mengyi's hole.

"That's because it's been starving for over a year, Su Yang. Do you like it?"

"Yes, I love it."

Su Yang suddenly began moving his h.i.p.s even faster and Zhu Mengyi m.o.a.ned louder in response, feeling her lower body burning with passion.

After pounding her from the front for a few minutes, Su Yang flipped Zhu Mengyi around and continued in the d.o.g.g.y position.

"Let me see what the two of you usually do," Su Yang suddenly said to them.

Wu Jingjing immediately understood the meaning behind his words and laid in front of Zhu Mengyi with her legs spread wide open.

"Go ahead, Sister Mingyi."

Zhu Mengyi nodded her head and approached Wu Jingjing's pink slit with her tongue sticking out.

"Aaaah~!" Wu Jingjing m.o.a.ned softly when Zhu Mengyi's tongue began tickling her pink pearl.

"That's it, Sister Mengyi! Lick it harder!" Wu Jingjing closed her eyes to focus on the delightful feeling between her legs, and she even began massaging her own b.r.e.a.s.ts.

Meanwhile, Su Yang enjoyed the view from behind Zhu Mengyi with his hands tightly gripping onto her soft buttocks.

Many minutes later, Su Yang said to Zhu Mengyi, "I am going to brand you with Family Seal now; it'll feel a little bit hotter than usual."

"Please, make me your woman officially, Su Yang!" Zhu Mengyi prepared herself.

A few seconds later, Su Yang released his load into Zhu Mengyi's body, overflowing her hole with his Yang Qi.

"So hot~!" Zhu Mengyi m.o.a.ned loudly, feeling as though her entire body was burning in a fire, especially the area below her stomach. However, despite the intense heat, it was not painful at all, even feeling somewhat pleasant.

Su Yang removed his shaft from Zhu Mengyi's hole once the Family Seal appeared on her body.

"This is the Family Seal? I have never seen anything like this before," Wu Jingjing caressed the Family Seal on Zhu Mengyi's body with a dazed gaze, looking mesmerized.

"I still need to activate it with my blood, but I'll do it once you both have the Family Seal on you," Su Yang said to them.

"Are you ready?" He looked at Wu Jingjing.

"Yes!"

She nodded with a serious and eager expression on her face.

And without further ado, Su Yang inserted his shaft into her hole.

"Aaaaaah~!" Wu Jingjing m.o.a.ned sharply when she felt his stiff rod reach the deepest parts of her cave; it was a nostalgic feeling that caused her body to tremble with excitement, almost as though it instinctively knew the feeling of Su Yang's sword.

"More... do me harder, Su Yang!" Wu Jingjing pleaded with a s.e.xy expression on her face.

In response to her pleading, Su Yang firmly grabbed her slim waist and began thrusting his h.i.p.s intensively, almost violently.

"Aaaaaah~!" As she was not prepared for such a passionate response, Wu Jingjing nearly collapsed from the intense pleasure, and her little sister gushed with Yin Qi every time Su Yang plunged his rod into her.

"Hehe... let me help you out, Sister Jingjing..." Seeing the opportunity to tease Wu Jingjing even further, Zhu Mengyi crawled to her body before she began sucking on her b.r.e.a.s.ts.

"Aaahh~!"

"Aaaaaah~!"

"Aaahhh~!"

Wu Jingjing m.o.a.ned crazily as Su Yang pounded her wet hole fiercely without stopping for many minutes, acting like a beast that hadn't have s.e.x in a long time.

Once Wu Jingjing was at her limit, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body, filling every nook and cranny in her cave with his white liquid.

"My body is burning! It feels so good!" Wu Jingjing exclaimed, feeling the Family Seal slowly appearing on her body.

A few moments later, she could see the Family Seal clearly imprinted onto her body.

"What a beautiful sight..." Wu Jingjing mumbled as she looked at Family Seal.

"Yes, a beautiful sight indeed." Su Yang nodded his head as he looked at the two n.a.k.e.d beauties before him, both with his Yang Qi leaking from their cave.

"Anyway, let me activate the seal."

Su Yang bit his thumb until it began bleeding. He then dripped a drop of his blood into their Family Seal, causing it to glow a golden light.

"Now you're officially my woman," Su Yang said as he licked the wound on his finger, instantly sealing it.

"I love you, Su Yang!" Zhu Mengyi suddenly pounced at him and kissed him on the lips passionately.

"Thank you for accepting us, Su Yang. I love you." Wu Jingjing kissed him next.

Sometime later, Su Yang asked them, "Do you want to continue?"

"Of course! We're going to do this until our children wake up!" Zhu Mengyi said.

Su Yang nodded, and he said to her, "Then allow me to show you a new technique."

"Oh? What are you going to do?" Zhu Mengyi stared at him with anticipating eyes.

Su Yang then stood up and snapped his fingers.

A second later—

Whoosh!

Alchemy Flames suddenly appeared and wrapped around his shaft, resembling a flaming sword.

"..."

Zhu Mengyi's jaw dropped to the floor after seeing this, her eyes as wide as saucers.

"Y-Y-You're going to stick that inside me...?" she asked him in a shaky voice.

"Do you not want me to? Then I'll give it to Wu Jingjing instead..."

"W-Wait a second! Who said anything about not wanting it?! I want it! Please give it to me!" Zhu Mengyi quickly said to him in a pleading voice.

Su Yang chuckled at her cute response and said, "Lay down— I'll give you a taste of this Flaming Dragon."

—

Author's Note: I will be releasing Discord for the public once again at the beginning of February. There will be a Glossary, Character Illustrations, and much more inside. Check the comment for Xiao Rong's Character Illustration!

Chapter 653 - Dragon's Breath

Gulp

Zhu Mengyi swallowed nervously at the sight of the mighty flaming dragon between Su Yang's legs, looking like a dragon engulfed in fierce flames. She simply cannot imagine what would happen to her body if Su Yang were to stick that inside her body.

However, her curiosity and excitement for the unknown far surpassed her anxiousness and fear, creating a weird and indescribable feeling in her heart.

"I am going to stick it in you now," Su Yang warned her.

"Go ahead..." Zhu Mengyi nodded and stared at the flaming dragon that was slowly flying towards her cave with wide eyes, not daring to miss its entrance.

And right as the head of the flaming dragon reached the entrance to Zhu Mengyi's cave, Su Yang suddenly rammed his entire shaft into Zhu Mengyi's hole, taking her by surprise.

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhh~!"

Zhu Mengyi felt an indescribable mixed feeling of pleasure and pain that jolted her entire body with intense pleasure, causing her to moan at the top of her lungs.

After penetrating Zhu Mengyi with his flaming dragon, Su Yang did not continue to move and instead silently stared Zhu Mengyi's face that looked extremely vulgar at this moment.

"What do you think?" He asked her with a confident smile on his face.

"It's... It's... I..." Zhu Mengyi was speechless, as she couldn't find any word to describe the pleasure she was feeling right now, or her mind was simply filled with so much pleasure that she couldn't think properly.

However, while Zhu Mengyi could not respond with words, her body had the perfect response for Su Yang's inquiry by gushing with Yin Qi without stopping, almost like a broken dam.

"Wow, there's so much coming out..." Even Wu Jingjing was amazed by the amount being released by Zhu Mengyi.

Of course, despite being drenched and soaking wet from her Yin Qi, Su Yang's meatstick remained burning with alchemy flames, even seemingly slightly fiercer than before, which only increased the pleasure felt by Zhu Mengyi.

A few moments later, once Zhu Mengyi's body stopped climaxing, Su Yang grabbed her waist and lifted her body slightly off the bed, and he began pounding her wet cave with his flaming dragon.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Zhu Mengyi's little sister immediately began flowing with Yin Qi again, and Su Yang could feel her inner walls becoming tighter and tighter with every thrust.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaahhhh!"

"Aaaaaahhhh~!"

Zhu Mengyi could feel a distinct burning sensation inside her body that greatly enhanced the feeling of pleasure she was receiving; it was so intense that it felt like she was a pill that was being cooked inside a cauldron.

However, no matter how hot her body burned, she did not feel the slightest pain the entire time, only feeling pleasure and satisfaction from it.

"Get ready, I am going to release it now," Su Yang suddenly said to her after many minutes of cultivation.

The next moment, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body. However, there was something different about his Yang Qi this time.

"I-It's burning! The Yang Qi is also burning with alchemy flames!" Wu Jingjing exclaimed in a shocked voice after witnessing this scene.

"That is a technique called 'Dragon's Breath'," Su Yang said with a proud-looking expression on his face. "Only those who have complete mastery over their alchemy flames would dare to infuse their Yang Qi with alchemy flames."

"Are there any benefits in doing that?" Wu Jingjing asked him.

"No, not really. It's really only meant to impress your partners. Of course, it also feels better than doing it normally," Su Yang said.

"Do you want to try it?" he then asked her.

"Y-Yes!" Wu Jingjing nodded, mostly because she didn't want to lose to Zhu Mengyi.

A few moments later, Wu Jingjing laid on the bed and Su Yang rubbed his shaft on her slit.

"This feels... amazing..." Wu Jingjing spoke in awe, and she was at a loss for words.

"If you think this feels good, just wait until I stick it inside..." Su Yang chuckled.

After rubbing on her pink jewel for some time, Su Yang suddenly inserted his flaming dragon into her cave, causing Wu Jingjing's body to jolt from shock.

"Aaaaah! This... This is...!"

Once his entire meatstick was inside her hole, Su Yang began thrusting his h.i.p.s, smacking her meat with his burning rod.

"Aaahh!"

"Aaaaaah!"

"Aahh!"

"Aaaah~!"

Wu Jingjing's entire body was quickly drenched in sweat from the burning sensation all over her body, feeling as though she'd been tossed into an oven, yet she did not want the feeling of pleasure to stop.

"More! Make me feel hotter! I want to melt in your embrace, Su Yang!" Wu Jingjing pleaded.

"Then let's see if you can endure this—"

Su Yang suddenly released his flaming Yang Qi into her cave, but he did not stop moving his h.i.p.s and continued to pound her cave that was engulfed in alchemy flames.

"!!!!!!!!!"

The feeling of pleasure was so intense that Wu Jingjing fell unconscious after experiencing it for only 10 seconds.

Seeing this, Su Yang unplugged his rod from her hole, and his flaming Yang Qi immediately flowed like a river from her cave.

"Let me clean that for you, Su Yang..." Zhu Mengyi crawled in front of his still flaming rod and began licking it without any hesitation.

"You can swallow the flaming Yang Qi if you want; it's completely safe," Su Yang said to her as she cleaned his rod.

Zhu Mengyi nodded, and she swallowed the burning Yang Qi, feeling a burning sensation flow down her throat, almost as though she was drinking strong alcohol.

"I'm so relieved and happy that you decided to return to us, Su Yang... I don't know how long I would've lasted without you..." Zhu Mengyi sighed afterward.

"And I won't leave you again— I promise." Su Yang said while gently caressing her smooth face.

"Un. I— We will follow you no matter where you go," Zhu Mengyi nodded with blissful tears falling down her face.

Chapter 654 - Is That Even Possible?

"How long have I been asleep...?" Wu Jingjing asked them after waking up sometime later.

"Not long. Only around fifteen minutes," Zhu Mengyi said to her.

"I see..." Wu Jingjing nodded before continuing, "I am going to wash my body before the children wake up."

"I will come with you," Zhu Mengyi said.

She then turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "Do you also want to come?"

"How could I say no to that?" Su Yang followed them with a smile on his face.

Once they were in the bathroom, Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing worked together to wash Su Yang's body, scrubbing every nook and cranny of his body.

Zhu Mengyi even used her b.r.e.a.s.ts to scrub his back, and when Wu Jingjing saw this, she started using her own b.r.e.a.s.ts to wash Su Yang in the front.

A few minutes later, both Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing used their hands to clean his little brother.

And right as they finished cleaning Su Yang, the babies outside suddenly started crying.

"You two can stay here and continue cleaning yourselves— I will take care of the children," Su Yang said to them before quickly rinsing the soap off his body with water and leaving the bathroom.

"Thank you, Su Yang." They said to him.

Once Su Yang left the scene, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi took turns cleaning each other's bodies.

"I would dream of Su Yang returning to us almost every day after he left. I did not expect him to truly return to us, much less accepting us as his women." Wu Jingjing spoke with a warm smile on her face, her eyes filled with emotion.

"I know exactly how you feel, Sister Jingjing. I thought I would be fine raising a child by myself, but alas, after giving birth to Jiayi, I quickly realized how wrong I was and how difficult it was to raise a child without a father. I'm really relieved Su Yang returned to us, even willing to take us with him." Zhu Mengyi said as Wu Jingjing washed her body.

"How many women do you think are in the family?" Wu Jingjing suddenly asked her.

"I cannot even imagine. Not only is Su Yang incredibly handsome but he's also incredibly talented, especially his alchemy skills. If he wanted partners, I'm confident that most of the women in the Four Seasons Academy wouldn't mind becoming his wife," Zhu Mengyi spoke with a smile on her face.

"Alchemy? You should see his sword skills... If the female disciples at the Holy Sword Sect were to witness what I had experienced, they would literally wet themselves from shock and awe." Wu Jingjing said, recalling what she'd experienced inside Nine Spring Hall where she first met Su Yang.

"Honestly, I don't care how many women there are within the family as long as I am a part of it," Zhu Mengyi said a moment later.

"What a coincidence, Sister Mengyi. I also happen to have similar thoughts," Wu Jingjing smiled.

Sometime later, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi left the bathroom with a refreshed and clean feeling all over their body and returned to Su Yang's side.

Inside the babies' room, Su Yang casually stood there with both Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi calmly in his embrace.

"You are really good at this, Su Yang... How many children do you have back in your own world?" Zhu Mengyi asked him after seeing his calm demeanor when handling the babies.

"How many? Zero— At least none that I know of," he responded with a calm expression on his face.

"Huh? You don't have any children in your previous life? Is that even possible?" Wu Jingjing looked at him with wide eyes.

"I refused to have children because I had a lot of enemies in my previous life, and I feared that their lives might be affected negatively because of me. However, it's also possible that I might've accidentally i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed some of my partners without being aware of it, as I was not born with perfect control over my Yang Qi," Su Yang explained to them.

"D-Does this mean we... We are the first ones to bear your children? At least willingly?" Zhu Mengyi asked him in a trembling voice.

"That's right," he nodded. "You two are the first women I have willingly i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed."

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi turned to look at each other with overwhelming emotions in their eyes, causing them to tear up.

After wiping the tears from their eyes, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi suddenly knelt on the floor and kowtowed to Su Yang.

"Thank you, Su Yang, for giving us the honor of bearing your first children..." They said to him while trying their best to resist bawling their eyes out.

"You're overreacting, you two. Hurry up and stand up," Su Yang said to them with a smile.

However, they remained kowtowing on the floor, unwilling to move.

It was at this moment the babies in Su Yang's embrace began crying out loud.

"Look, you made the babies cry. If you don't stand up, your dignity as mothers will disappear..." Su Yang said to them.

"..."

Hearing their daughters cry, they had no choice but to stop kowtowing and stand up.

"They are probably hungry after waking up," Wu Jingjing said after wiping the tears from her eyes.

Su Yang quickly handed the babies back to their mother so they could be fed.

Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing proceeded to loosen their robes until one of their b.r.e.a.s.ts popped out, and they began b.r.e.a.s.t.feeding their daughter shortly later.

Once the room was quiet again and the babies were calmly drinking their b.r.e.a.s.t milk, Wu Jingjing suddenly said, "Su Yang, do you think you can come to the Holy Sword Academy and meet my father later? He was extremely shocked when he heard your name, but he wouldn't explain it to me no matter how much I asked, saying that it would be for the best if I didn't know about it."

"The Holy Sword Academy, huh? I'll go when I have the time," he nodded.

Chapter 655 - Heading to the Holy Sword Academy

"Your Majesty, Sect Master Zhu has sent us a message."

A guard kneeled before the handsome middle-aged man with a scroll resting on his palms.

"Sect Master Zhu? Let me see." Emperor Lian accepted the scroll and began reading the message.

"The Xie Family... Su Yang... from the Eastern Continent? Interesting..." Emperor Lian rubbed his chin with a profound gaze.

"If I recall correctly, Su Yang is the name of Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband. If this Su Yang is the same individual, I would very much like to meet him," Emperor Lian nodded his head.

"Let Sect Master Zhu know that I am willing to meet with these guests and that it will happen in two days."

"As Your Majesty commands!"

The guard nodded before leaving the room.

"These guests from the Eastern Continent... They must have crossed the Jade Sea with Immortal Fairy Su Yue's assistance. Since that's the case, I cannot ignore them." Emperor Lian recalled the flying ship that approached their Holy Central Continent not long ago.

Meanwhile, after receiving Emperor Lian's response from a communication talisman, Sect Master Zhu immediately went to share the news with Su Yang.

"Great news, Su Yang! I have received a response from Emperor Lian just now, and he agreed to meet with you in two days!" Sect Master Zhu said to him after going to their house.

"Two days, huh?" Su Yang nodded.

"Oh, one more thing. I didn't mention the Four Elements Root to Emperor Lian because he might not have agreed with the meeting if he knew you were only there for the treasure, so you'll have to tell him yourself."

"That's fine. Thank you," Su Yang said.

"Then I'll go speak with the Xie Family now," Sect Master Zhu said.

"Wait for a second, mother! Before you go, I want you to know that I have something very important to tell you later," Zhu Mengyi said to her.

"Something very important?" Sect Master Zhu raised her eyebrows in a suspicious manner before nodding, "I understand. You can come to my room whenever you are ready."

Sect Master Zhu left shortly later to let the Xie Family know about the meeting in two days.

Meanwhile, Zhu Mengyi said to Su Yang, "Su Yang, I am going to tell my mother that I will be leaving with you in the future."

"Do you want me to come with you?" he asked.

"No, I can handle this by myself. You should take this time and visit the Holy Sword Academy with Jingjing before meeting with Emperor Lian," Zhu Mengyi said to him.

Su Yang nodded and said Wu Jingjing, "Before we head to the Holy Sword Academy, I should let the Xie Family know so they are aware of my absence."

"Okay, we'll be waiting here for you," Wu Jingjing said.

Sometime later, Su Yang went to the Xie Family's living quarters.

"Su Yang? Do you need anything? Senior Zhu just left this place after telling us about the meeting in two days if that's what you're going to tell us," Xie Wang said after opening the door.

"I know, she told me before coming here. I am here to let you know that I will be away from this place briefly to visit the Holy Sword Academy, one of the Three Ancient Academies."

"Will you return in time for the meeting?" Xie Wang asked him.

"Of course," said Su Yang.

"Okay, I will let the other two know."

Su Yang returned to Wu Jingjing's side shortly later.

"Are we ready to leave?" Su Yang asked her after returning.

"Yes, we can leave whenever."

"Then hop on."

Su Yang retrieved the small flying boat before boarding it, and Wu Jingjing followed him with Wu Min in her arms.

"Where is the Holy Sword Academy?" Su Yang asked her once they were in the air.

"200,000 miles north," she said.

"200,000 miles? How did the two of you return to the Four Seasons Academy so fast?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Oh... We couldn't wait to meet you again after receiving Senior Zhu's message, so Zhu Mengyi used a life-saving treasure to teleport us back here..." Wu Jingjing explained with a bashful expression.

"You wasted a life-saving treasure just to come back faster? I don't even know whether I should laugh or cry at this..." Su Yang said while shaking his head.

"Anyways, sit tight— this flying boat is quite fast, and we'll reach the Holy Sword Academy in about fifteen minutes."

"That fast!?" Wu Jingjing's eyes widened.

"I can hold onto the baby if you're not confident," Su Yang said with a smile.

"P-Please do..." Wu Jingjing quickly handed Wu Min to him before they began moving.

Once Su Yang and Wu Jingjing left the sect, Zhu Mengyi made her way to her mother's room.

"You're here already? What did you want to speak to me about?" Sect Master Zhu said after seeing her face.

"I just want to let you know that Su Yang has decided to take responsibility for our children and accepted me and Wu Jingjing into his family," she wasted no time telling her mother the truth.

"What!? Is that true?!" Sect Master Zhu immediately stood up from shock and on her face was an ecstatic expression.

"Yes, I have even accepted his Family Seal." Zhu Mengyi lifted her robes to show her mother the Family Seal below her belly button.

"W-What is that?" Sect Master Zhu asked her, as this is also her first time seeing such a thing.

"This is proof that Su Yang has accepted me into his family— the Su Family." Zhu Mengyi said.

"And because I have decided to join his family with Wu Jingjing, I will be leaving the sect to go with him in the future."

"W-W-Wait a second! You're going to leave the sect? This is too sudden!"

"I know, but this is something that I have already decided, as I don't want to separate from him again, and our daughter needs a father," she said to her.

Chapter 656 - Holy Sword Academy

"..."

After a moment of silence, Sect Master Zhu spoke in a low voice, "When? When are you going to leave this place?"

"I will leave with Su Yang when he returns to the Eastern Continent," Zhu Mengyi responded.

"Aiya!" Sect Master Zhu suddenly released a loud sigh while rubbing her temples in a stressed manner.

"I just became a grandmother, and you're already going to take Zhu Jiayi away from me before she can even understand who I am? Are you sure you aren't doing this just to screw with me because of how I treated you in the past? This should be criminal."

"I know this isn't fair to you, mother, but I am definitely not doing this on purpose! I thought I would be fine without Su Yang, but I quickly realized my naivety after he left. Now that he has returned and even

offered me to follow him, I simply cannot say no, and even Zhu Jiayi seems to really like him. I don't want her to grow up without a father."

"..."

Sect Master Zhu silently stared at the beautiful little girl sleeping in Zhu Mengyi's arms, feeling a perplexing emotion in her heart. As much as she wanted Zhu Mengyi and Zhu Jiayi to stay in the sect, she couldn't possibly deny Zhu Mengyi of a partner and Zhu Jiayi of a father no matter how selfish she was.

"As long as you promise me that you will visit me with Zhu Jiayi once in a while, I will stop complaining," Sect Master Zhu spoke after a long moment of silence.

However, Zhu Mengyi did not respond to her and merely remained silent.

Seeing this, Sect Master Zhu frowned, "What? Are you telling me that you are not willing to visit me after you leave? And you dare say that you aren't trying to screw with me!?"

Sect Master Zhu wanted to slam the desk in anger, but she didn't dare to scare the sleeping Zhu Jiayi.

"It's not that I don't want to visit you, mother. It's a complicated situation..." Zhu Mengyi sighed.

If she follows Su Yang back to his own world, it might be incredibly difficult if not outright impossible to return to this world, hence why she cannot make that promise with her mother.

"Complicated? What's so complicated about this? If Su Yang can travel the Jade Sea and come here from the Eastern Continent, why can't you visit me?" she asked.

"You don't understand at all, mother. When I leave with Su Yang, I am not just traveling to another continent..." Zhu Mengyi shook her head.

As much as she wanted to tell her mother about Su Yang's real identity, she didn't dare to reveal his Immortal background without his permission even if it was her own mother asking.

"If you can't promise me that you'll visit me, let me speak with Su Yang! I'm sure that he'll let me see my granddaughter!" her mother then said.

"Su Yang just left the sect with Wu Jingjing to travel to the Holy Sword Academy," Zhu Mengyi said to her. "Wu Jingjing wants Su Yang to meet with her father, Senior Wu..."

◆◆ Then we'll continue this conversation once he returns. You should leave before I wake up the baby," Sect Master Zhu said, clearly upset about Zhu Mengyi's decision to leave the sect without telling her everything.

Zhu Mengyi sighed, "I understand... I will return with Su Yang later..."

Meanwhile, 200,000 miles away from the Four Seasons Academy, Su Yang and Wu Jingjing have just arrived at the Holy Sword Sect.

"This is..." Su Yang stared at the statue of a handsome young man standing in a heroic pose with a thick sword on his back that was placed right in front of the sect entrance.

"That is my father during his prime, Wu Jiang, who is also known as the Sword Saint." Wu Jingjing explained to him.

"Sword Saint, huh?" Su Yang shook his head inwardly. If the Sword Saints in the Divine Heaven were to learn that someone at the Sovereign Spirit Realm dared to claim the title of Sword Saint, the Holy Sword Academy would disappear within 24 hours.

"Come on, let's go meet my father," she grabbed Su Yang's hand and pulled him towards the sect entrance while he carried Wu Min with his other arm.

"S-Senior apprentice-sister!"

The disciples guarding the entrance immediately bowed to her.

They then turned to look at Su Yang with a dazed face, as they were unfamiliar with his face. However, what shocked them the most was the fact that he was carrying Wu Min. Just who is this handsome young man? If Wu Jingjing trusted him enough to let him carry Wu Min, then he must be someone fairly important to her! Hell, he was even holding onto Wu Jingjing's hands!

"Senior apprentice-sister, this young man is...?" One of the disciples decided to ask her.

"He's here as my guest," she quickly responded.

"What I mean is—"

Before that disciple could even finish his sentence, Wu Jingjing narrowed her eyes at him and spoke with a frown on her face, "When did it become your job to question my relationsh.i.p.s?"

"T-There must have been a misunderstanding! I wouldn't dare to..." The disciple quickly apologized.

"..."

Seeing this, Wu Jingjing spoke in a cold voice, "I know what you're doing. Tell that person to stay away from us, or he'll regret it."

"..."

That disciple's entire body immediately stiffened after hearing her words.

However, before he could even respond, Wu Jingjing pulled Su Yang into the sect and walked away without looking back.

Once they were gone, the disciples there mumbled to each other, "If I had to guess, that young man is definitely her lover..."

"Yeah... And he's most likely also the one who i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed Senior apprentice-sister Wu..."

"Haaa... that person isn't going to be happy about this..."

"Whether he'll be happy or not is none of our concerns. Our job is to report our findings to him, and this is something we must report even at the cost of our lives."

"Then who wants to be the one to report to him about the situation?"

"..."

The place immediately turned silent.

Chapter 657 - Burning With Anger and Jealousy

"What was that about?" Su Yang asked Wu Jingjing sometime later.

"Haaa... Where should I begin?" Wu Jingjing sighed.

"Is this about that disciple who was with you at that time?" Su Yang asked.

"Disciple Zhang? No, he stopped bothering me ever since what happened at the Nine Spring Hall. This person is much more difficult to deal with, mostly because of his status..."

"Hoh? Who is this person that even one of the Ancient Academies cannot deal with?" Su Yang asked with his interest piqued.

"In the entire Holy Central Continent, there is only one power that surpasses the Holy Sword Academy and the Three Ancient Academies—"

"Let me guess, the Lian Family," Su Yang interrupted.

Wu Jingjing nodded her head and continued, "He's the son of Emperor Lian— Lian Heng, and he's also a disciple in the Holy Sword Academy— my father's disciple."

"I understand what you mean by 'difficult to deal with' now," Su Yang said with a calm expression on his face.

"Although Lian Heng is not the aggressive type, he's incredibly persistent. He has a thing for me ever since he became a disciple here at the Holy Sword Academy, and he has been chasing after me since then." Wu Jingjing sighed, and she continued a moment later, "Hell, he's still trying to court me now despite knowing that I already have a child with someone else."

"Though, he did stop bothering me for a year when he first found out that I was pregnant. However, he started returning shortly after Wu Min was born. I think he somehow knows that I am a single parent, hence why he's still trying."

"Hmmm... This person is indeed quite persistent. You can't help but admire people like him," Su Yang said. "There are not many men out there who would be willing to accept a woman who already has a baby with another man into their life. Of course, his behavior could also be explained as a fetish."

"F-Fetish? There are people with such fetishes?" Wu Jingjing looked at him with a terrified expression.

"Oh, you have no idea how many fetishes exist out there," Su Yang said with a weird smile on his face.

"Anyway, what does this Lian Heng guy have to do with those disciples?" he asked her.

"Well... As the son of the Lian Family, it is only natural that he has near limitless resources at hand, and because of his obsession with me, he has spies everywhere watching over me, hence why those disciples were asking personal questions, as they have to report to Lian Heng."

"It wasn't too bad at first, but after I gave birth to Wu Min, he has essentially become a stalker who wants to know everything that happens in my life— probably because he wants to know the identity of Wu Min's father," Wu Jingjing sighed.

"Your father can't stop it?"

"He hasn't tried, but that's because we both know it will only be a waste of effort." Wu Jingjing shook her head with a bitter smile.

"But I don't have to worry about him anymore since I have you here with me now," she said to him with a bright smile on her face.

"Of course. As long as I am here, I won't let anyone harm you or our daughter no matter who they are, even if that person is the son of the emperor or even the emperor himself," Su Yang said, and he continued, "And since he will learn of my identity sooner or later, we might as well reveal our relationship ourselves."

"Okay." Wu Jingjing nodded her head.

She then embraced his entire arm until it was practically pressing against her b.r.e.a.s.ts. Now anyone who sees them will immediately know their intimate relationship with each other.

"L-L-L-Look over there!"

"Heavens! Is that Senior apprentice-sister Wu?!"

When the disciples noticed Wu Jingjing and Su Yang and saw the intimate atmosphere between them that was akin to a husband and wife going on a stroll with their child, the disciples stopped whatever they were doing to stare at them with gawking expressions on their faces.

"C-Could that young man be Senior apprentice-sister Wu's partner!? Wu Min's father?!"

"That must be him! I cannot imagine why else would Senior apprentice-sister act so intimately with him!"

"This is massive news! We need to report this to His Highness if someone hasn't already!"

Wu Jingjing and Su Yang ignored the chaotic surroundings and the countless gazes that were staring at them and continued to walk down the sect with calm expressions on their faces, acting as though they were in their own little world.

Meanwhile, somewhere in the Holy Sword Academy, a handsome young man wore a cold expression on his face as another disciple knelt before him.

"What you said just now... I want to hear it again," said the handsome young man.

"Yes, Your Highness!" The disciple spoke before repeating his words, "Senior apprentice-sister Wu's partner has finally shown himself, and he's currently strolling through the sect with Senior apprentice-sister Wu embracing his arms while holding her daughter in the other hand! If he's not the person His Highness has been looking for, this subject will cut his own throat!"

"Take me to him!" Lian Heng spoke in a demanding voice.

"Yes, Your Highness!"

'So you have finally shown yourself! I don't care who you are— I will make you regret stealing Wu Jingjing from me!' Lian Heng could feel his heart burning with anger and jealousy just thinking about the years of effort he'd put into courting Wu Jingjing only to have another man steal her from him, even defiling her body by impregnating her.

A few seconds later, Lian Heng left his living quarters to follow the disciple.

Meanwhile, a few buildings away from Lian Heng's living quarters, a woman with peerless facial features watched from her window as Lian Heng left his house with a murderous expression on his face.

"What is that idiot up to now?" she mumbled in a curious voice.

Chapter 658 - This F.u.c.ker Is Really Handsome!

'F.u.c.k! I have never been this f.u.c.k.i.n.g angry before! I wasn't this angry even when I found out that Wu Jingjing had been i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed by another man! It's only when this motherf.u.c.ker finally shows himself that my suppressed emotions are exploding!' Lian Heng cursed inwardly.

'Where has he been for the past year? Why did he have to show up now— when I finally decided to toss my pride as the Crown Prince aside and started courting Wu Jingjing again despite her status as a sullied woman?!'

When a woman is no longer pure and loses her status as a maiden, especially if that woman is not married, they are often referred to as a sullied woman or other similar terms.

After following the disciple for many minutes, the disciple suddenly shouted, "Over there, Your Highness! That's Wu Jingjing and her partner!"

"Let me see this bastard's face!"

Lian Heng pushed the disciple to the side and stared at Wu Jingjing and the handsome young man standing beside her in the distance.

'F.u.c.k! This f.u.c.ker is really handsome!' Lian Heng's eyes widened with surprise, as he didn't expect Wu Jingjing's partner to be such a handsome individual, and that somehow lessened his anger, because if Wu Jingjing had picked someone that was uglier than him, it would've definitely worsened his rage.

After waking up from his daze a moment later, Lian Heng shouted loudly before approaching them, "Stop right there!"

"Hm?"

Su Yang lifted his eyebrows when he noticed Lian Heng walking towards their direction in an aggressive manner and a face twisted in anger.

"That's Lian Heng... Emperor Lian's son..." Wu Jingjing said to him in a low voice.

Once they were only a few meters apart, Lian Heng stopped walking and stared at Su Yang directly in his eyes.

"Wu Jingjing greets His Highness," Wu Jingjing bowed to him in a courteous manner.

Lian Heng would normally respond to her greetings, but he was too emotional right now to even glance at her.

"Who the hell are you?" Lian Heng spoke to Su Yang in a cold and demanding voice.

"..."

Su Yang looked at Lian Heng with a calm expression on his face before speaking in a nonchalant voice, "It is common courtesy to introduce yourself before you ask for another's identity."

"Such insolence! Who do you think you are standing before?!" Lian Heng roared.

"I don't care who you are, but can you lower your voice? If you scare my daughter and make her cry, I might not be able to control my emotions," Su Yang spoke with a frown on his face.

Gasp!

The disciple watching this scene in the background immediately gasped after hearing Su Yang's words.

"H-He confirmed it himself! He's really Wu Min's father!"

Even though the disciples didn't need Su Yang to say that he was the father, it was still shocking to hear his confirmation.

"..."

Lian Heng's body trembled violently, and his cultivation at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm erupted a second later, causing the atmosphere there to change.

"CRAZY BASTARD!" Lian Feng roared.

"Waaaaa! Waaaa! Waaaaah!"

Wu Min began crying loudly after being startled by Lian Heng's loud voice.

"You little bastard..." Su Yang growled under his breath, and his eyes began turning red.

"Calm her down for me while I take care of this insolent bastard who doesn't know the immensity between heaven and earth!" Su Yang passed the crying Wu Jingjing with a scary expression on his face.

When Wu Jingjing saw the spine-chilling expression on his face and felt the killing intent in his aura, she hastily spoke in a terrified voice, "Y-You can't kill him! He's Emperor's Lian son!"

However, no response came from Su Yang as he immediately rushed at Lian Heng after handing Wu Min to Wu Jingjing.

"Hahaha! What do you think you are going to do with your cultivation that's only at the sixth level Heavenly Spirit Realm?! I am at the peak of the—"

Lian Heng laughed arrogantly when he saw Su Yang rushing at him despite his superior cultivation base. However, before Lian Heng could even finish his sentence, Su Yang suddenly disappeared from his view

and appeared right beside him in a split second, and the only thing he saw before feeling intense pain was a large fist flying towards his handsome face.

Boom!

Despite having a higher cultivation base and being at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm, Lian Heng was unable to resist the immense force from Su Yang's punch and was sent flying like a ragdoll before smashing into one of the buildings there and destroying the wall.

"..."

The entire place turned silent, and the disciples there stared at Su Yang and the massive hole in the wall with gawking expressions on their faces, looking as though they'd just witnessed their ancestors rising from their graves.

Hell, even Wu Min stopped crying when she witnessed the scene.

"Oh, my lord... He actually dared to punch Emperor Lian's son in the face!"

The disciples exclaimed with terrified expressions after they realized the gravity of the situation.

"HOW DARE YOU!"

Lian Heng escaped from the rubble a few seconds later and landed many meters away from Su Yang before staring at him with bloodshot eyes and a bloody nose.

"I SWEAR TO—"

Lian Heng roared.

However, before he could even finish his sentence, Su Yang suddenly appeared before him in an instant like a ghost and grabbed his robes by the chest.

"Are you trying to scare my daughter with your loud voice again? I guess you are the slow type that needs more than one lesson before you understand anything."

Su Yang raised his fist and punched Lian Heng in the face again.

However, because Su Yang was clutching to his robes, Lian Heng did not fly anywhere and remained standing— levitating there.

"Do you understand now?" Su Yang suddenly punched Lian Heng in the face again before he could even open his mouth to respond.

"No?"

Pop

Su Yang punched him again.

"How about now?"

Pop

"Still no?"

Pop *Pop* *Pop*

"..."

The disciples watched in horror as Su Yang savagely pummeled Lian Heng in his face for the next few minutes until Lian Heng's entire face was swollen black and blue.

Chapter 659 - Pummeling the Crown Prince

"P-Pleese... I-I undursten..." Lian Heng managed to mumble in a low voice after eating Su Yang's fist for the tenth time.

"What? I didn't hear you," Su Yang said as he raised his fist again.

"I-I SAID I UNDERSTAND! PLEASE STOP HITTING ME!" Lian Heng shouted despite the pain on his face.

Su Yang shook his head and released another punch at Lian Heng's face.

"You clearly don't understand a damn thing..." Su Yang sighed as he continued to pummel Lian Heng until he was satisfied a few minutes later.

Once Su Yang stopped beating Lian Heng, he tossed Lian Heng's body to the side like trash before returning to Wu Jingjing's side.

"S-Su Yang... you didn't kill him, right?" Wu Jingjing asked him in a worried tone.

If he really killed Emperor Lian's son, one can only imagine the outrage it would cause.

"Of course not. I would love to kill him, but I still need the Four Elements Root from his father," he responded in a casual voice.

"..."

Wu Jingjing stared at him with wide eyes. So if not for the Four Elements Root, he wouldn't have hesitated to kill the Emperor's son?

"W-Wait a second!"

Just as Su Yang and Wu Jingjing began walking away, Lian Heng called out to them.

"What do you want? Are you not satisfied with my beating and want more?" Su Yang turned to look at him, who was already applying medicine to his face and swallowing recovery pills.

"I...I challenge you to an official match! If you can defeat me in a sword battle, I will give up on Wu Jingjing and never bother her again! However, if I win, you will disappear from her life!"

"What kind of nonsense is that?" Su Yang shook his head with an unimpressed expression on his face.

"You are suggesting a bet where you have nothing to lose while I lose my woman and daughter? And why swords? What if I don't know how to use a sword? No matter how you look at it, this isn't fair in the slightest."

"So what if it isn't fair?! I am Lian Heng, son of Emperor Lian and the crown prince! If I wanted to take Wu Jingjing by force, who can stop me?!"

"If you don't agree to this battle, I will use my authority to take her by force, and you can't do anything to stop me— unless you fight me on the stage with a sword!"

"Your Highness, you are going overboard. My father won't let you do as you please even if you are his disciple and the crown prince!" Wu Jingjing said to him with an unpleasant frown on her face.

"Don't worry, Wu Jingjing, I won't physically force you to become mine or anything like that. If I was that kind of person, you would've become my woman long ago!" Lian Heng spoke with a confident grin on his face.

"..."

Wu Jingjing was speechless. Did Su Yang beat him too hard that he'd lost some of his senses? No matter how he forces himself on her, she is still being forced to be with him!

"Haaa..." Su Yang sighed loudly.

He then turned around to face Lian Heng with a narrowed gaze before speaking in a calm voice, "Since beating you with my fist was not good enough, I guess I will have to do it with a sword instead."

"When do you want to do this? I don't have much time here so the quicker we deal with this the better," he said.

"Right now! We are going to fight right now!" Lian Heng said.

"Hmm... I don't want to appear as someone bullying someone who's already injured, so I will give you some time to recover before we begin." Su Yang said.

"Follow me!"

Lian Heng said to Su Yang before walking away.

"I guess we will have to postpone the meeting with your father until we deal with him," Su Yang said to Wu Jingjing.

"No matter what you do, just don't kill him... I don't want my father or the Holy Sword Academy to feel Emperor Lian's wrath..." Wu Jingjing warned him.

"Hahaha... Don't worry, I won't kill him, but I will butcher his pride as a man," Su Yang laughed as he followed Lian Heng with a casual feeling around him.

Wu Jingjing sighed before following him with Wu Min in her arms.

"T-This is crazy! We need to let everyone know about this event!"

"The crown prince is going to fight with Senior apprentice-sister Wu's partner on the stage!"

"A sword battle, too!"

News of Su Yang and Lian Heng's battle spread across the entire Holy Sword Academy sect like a wildfire, shocking every disciple that heard it.

And very quickly, pretty much every disciple and sect elder in the sect gathered at the stage to witness this fight.

And although some sect elders wanted to stop this fight before it got out of hand, they didn't dare to refuse Lian Heng during such a sensitive time as everyone and their mother knew about the crown prince's affection for Wu Jingjing.

"Heavens, what happened to His Highness's face? It looks horrible!" The first thing the disciples noticed when they saw Lian Heng was his beaten face, looking like someone had smashed his face against the wall multiple times.

"What? That handsome young man did that to His Highness? Unbelievable!"

"How could His Highness suffer such a devastating defeat from someone who's three whole levels below his own cultivation?"

"I'm sure it was foul play, hence why His Highness wanted to fight him on the stage with so many witnesses."

"Wow, that young man is Senior apprentice-sister Wu's partner? I totally understand why she'd picked someone like him!"

"Right? I wouldn't mind being i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed by someone like him, either!"

An hour later, when the seats around the stage were filled to the brim with disciples and Lian Heng's face injury had healed to the point where he could no longer feel any pain, Su Yang and Lian Heng stepped onto the stage.

However, not even a moment later, a dominating presence appeared not far away, and a beautiful woman with peerless features resembling a fairy descended from the heavens and landed beside the stage.

When this beautiful fairy appeared, the surroundings became dead silent, and everybody there stared at her as though they were at loss for words.

Chapter 660 - Mysterious Beauty

Su Yang looked at this beautiful fairy who appeared out of thin air in silence, as her appearance rivaled Wu Jingjing, Zhu Mengyi, and even Xie Xingfang.

"What the hell are you doing here?" Lian Heng said to her with a frown on his face.

The beautiful woman glanced at him before responding in a nonchalant voice, "I can ask you the same thing. What the hell are you doing?"

"It's none of your business, so quickly get out of my face," said Lian Heng, not caring for her disrespectful tone.

"None of my business? I have already seen everything from the beginning, and your actions are sickening. Are you trying to ruin the Lian Family's reputation with your farce? I was going to intervene, but when I saw you getting beaten like a dog, I had to stop myself as I didn't want to interrupt such an entertaining scene."

"Shut the hell up and stay out of my way!" Lian Heng roared at her.

"Oh, you don't have to worry about me getting in your way. I am just here as a spectator," she calmly responded, feeling no pressure despite facing the crown prince, even arguing with him.

'*Who is this woman?*' Su Yang was intrigued by this mysterious woman's abnormal presence.

Noticing Su Yang's gaze, the beautiful woman turned to look at him with a cold expression, "I don't know who you are, and I would like to reward you for beating this dog, but no matter the situation, you have raised your hands against someone from the Lian Family. I hope you are prepared for the consequences of defying the Lian Family."

Hearing her warning, Su Yang smiled and said, "I also don't know who you are, nor do I care, but if anyone dares to touch my women, even if they are the Emperor's son, I will promptly deal with them. He is already immensely lucky that I haven't killed him for trying to covet my woman."

The woman narrowed her eyes at him and spoke in a cold voice, "Your words just now... I can take that as a challenge to the Lian Family, right?"

Seeing her strong reaction, Su Yang could guess her identity, and he spoke, "You must also belong to the Lian Family. No wonder why you dare to speak with this idiot on equal footing."

"Su Yang! That's the crown prince's elder sister and also Emperor Lian's only daughter, Lian Li!" Wu Jingjing said to him from outside the stage.

"It doesn't matter who they are— if they dare to oppose me, I will put them in their place," Su Yang said with a domineering aura around him.

He narrowed his eyes at Lian Li and continued, "If you have a problem with that, you can also come up here after I deal with that idiot. If you cannot wait, I don't mind taking on both of you at once."

"Such insolence!" Lian Li shouted, and her cultivation base that was surprisingly at the first level Sovereign Spirit Realm filled the entire stage.

"Why don't we all calm down for a moment?"

Suddenly, another pressure at the Sovereign Spirit Realm appeared, canceling out Lian Li's pressure.

The people there immediately turned to look towards the sky, where a man exuding a powerful aura was descending towards the stage.

"Sect Master!" The disciples there greeted this man.

"Father..." Wu Jingjing already expected his appearance sooner or later so she wasn't surprised to see him appear here. Though, she didn't want Su Yang and her father to meet in such a condition.

"Master." Lian Heng and Lian Li bowed to Wu Jiang despite their royal status, showing their deep respect for him.

Wu Jiang nodded his head towards the royal siblings before turning to look at Su Yang with a profound gaze.

'This young man is Su Yang...?' Wu Jiang was shocked inwardly when he saw Su Yang's young appearance, as he'd expected someone older. However, appearances can be very deceiving in the cultivation world so he didn't dare to judge a book by its cover.

"I rushed here after receiving a brief explanation of the situation, but before we start, I would like to know a few things..." Wu Jiang said a moment later, his gaze still on Su Yang.

Su Yang could easily guess what Wu Jiang wanted to ask him, so he cleared his throat and spoke in a calm and clear voice, "My name is Su Yang, and as you can guess, I am the one who i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed Wu Jingjing who later gave birth to Wu Min. It's nice to finally meet you, father-in-law."

"F-Father-in-law?" Wu Jiang stared at Su Yang with a blank expression, as he was not prepared for this unfair attack by Su Yang.

"Are you related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue by chance?" Wu Jiang suddenly asked him with a serious expression.

"Immortal Fairy Su Yue? Nope, I have never heard of her before since I am not from around here," Su Yang lied with a straight face.

After confirming that he was not related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue, Wu Jiang sighed in relief inwardly, as he didn't want to deal with Immortal Fairy Su Yue and the royal family.

A moment of silence later, Wu Jiang spoke with a frown on his face, "I don't recall Wu Jingjing being engaged to anyone. And from my understanding, you told my daughter that you would not bear responsibility for impregnating her, hence why she has been taking care of Wu Min as a single mother ever since her birth."

"That is indeed what I had said to her before, but things have changed, and I have decided to take responsibility and accept her into my family, hence why I have come to the Holy Sword Academy today," Su Yang said.

"He's telling the truth, father! We were on our way to meet you, but the crown prince aggressively blocked our path, which led us to this stage!" Wu Jingjing said to him.

"I understand your frustrations and the situation, but it does not justify beating the crown prince in such a vicious manner," Wu Jiang said to her before looking at Su Yang and continuing, "Since you have offended the Lian Family, even I cannot save you. However, you can still save Wu Jingjing by staying away from her. I don't want her to get involved with your mess."

"Father! What are you saying?!" Wu Jingjing shouted at him with a baffled face.

However, Wu Jiang ignored her and waited for Su Yang's response.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke with a calm expression on his face, "Just like that idiot over there, if you want to take Wu Jingjing away from me, then you'll have to defeat me in a sword fight."

Many gasping noises could be heard from the surroundings after they heard Su Yang's bold words.

"D-Did he just challenge the Sword Saint to a sword match...?"

"The audacity! The boldness!"

"What the heck?! It turns out that he was an idiot all along! I feel sorry for Senior apprentice-sister Wu!"

The place quickly became filled with laughter and many other noises.

Chapter 661 - Demon Slaying Sword

"Silence!" Wu Jiang suddenly roared, causing the entire place to turn silent.

Once the entire place was silent, Wu Jiang turned to look at Su Yang with a narrowed gaze on his displeased expression.

"You... A Junior who is only at the sixth level Heavenly Spirit Realm dares to challenge Sovereign? A mere child who does not know the immensity between heaven and earth!" Wu Jiang growled.

However, Su Yang remained calm and spoke, "Are you really the Sect Master of a sword sect? Even beginner swordmasters should know that in a sword battle, one's cultivation is not as important as one's understanding with the sword."

"Hahahahaha!" Lian Heng suddenly burst out laughing, "I thought you were just being bold because he is Wu Jingjing's father, but to question a Sword Saint's understanding of the sword! You are just plain stupid!"

"Sword Saint? Ah, right. Wu Jingjing did mention that before. Anyway, I will show you what it takes to be called a Sword Saint later— after I beat this idiot." Su Yang turned to look at Lian Heng and continued, "Are you ready to fight yet?"

"You think you can really defeat me in a sword battle? I don't know how much experience you have with the sword but if you think you can beat me like previously when I have a sword in my hand, then you are gravely mistaken!"

Seeing this, Wu Jiang merely shook his head and spoke in a sighing voice before walking off the stage, "Since you are Wu Min's father, I won't let you die in front of her, but since you have decided to challenge the Lian Family, I won't be able to save you once you leave this place."

"Father! Are you seriously trying to separate Su Yang from us? You have no idea what you are doing!" Wu Jingjing yelled at him in a fierce voice after he approached her.

"I have no idea what I am doing? I can say the same words to you, Jingjing. Clearly, you have chosen the wrong man to make a child with. If your mother was here, what do you think she would say about this situation?"

"If mother was here, she would be scolding you for trying to separate Wu Min and her father!" Wu Jingjing answered without hesitation.

"Aiya... Where did I go wrong in teaching you? You are currently blinded by your feelings, Jingjing. However, I am confident that after this duel, your eyes will be able to see again, and then you will see just how pathetic of a man that person is."

"Hmph! I cannot wait to see you begging on your knees to Su Yang to stay with me once you witness his greatness!" Wu Jingjing coldly snorted before ignoring him and turning her focus onto the stage.

Once Su Yang and Lian Heng were standing about 50 meters apart from each other, Wu Jiang spoke, "I, Wu Jiang, Sect Master of the Holy Sword Academy will foresee this sword battle between His Highness, Lian Heng, and Su Yang."

"Although I cannot guarantee either of you that there will be no accidents, I can guarantee you that I will do my best to not let either of you die on the stage."

"Furthermore, since this is not a normal spar but a sword battle, you will only be allowed to sword techniques or techniques related to the sword, and you are only allowed to use swords of similar quality! This way, neither of you will have an unfair advantage over the other, and it will be your sword techniques that will make the difference!"

After Wu Jiang ended his sentence, Lian Heng brought out a glowing black sword from his storage ring and pointed it at Su Yang.

"I can already guess the answer, but do you have a sword of similar quality to my Black Demon Sword?"

The Black Demon Sword was a Heaven-grade treasure at the peak quality, and it emitted a tyrannical aura that caused the atmosphere to tremble in terror.

"Indeed, I don't have a sword that can rival the one in your hands," Su Yang nodded. "However, I don't need a powerful sword to deal with you."

"Hahaha! What kind of excuse is that?!" Lian Heng laughed out loud, and the disciples watching also laughed at him.

"Su Yang! Take this sword!" Wu Jingjing suddenly called out to him before tossing a beautiful sword with a red blade.

"Oh? This sword is..." Su Yang caught the sword and looked at it with a nostalgic smile on his face. It was the same sword Wu Jingjing had used at the Nine Spring Hall.

"That's the Demon Slaying Sword!"

The disciples there easily recognized this iconic sword that has multiple legends attached to its name.

"Jingjing! You actually gave him your Demon Slaying Sword!? That's our family heirloom!" Wu Jiang yelled at her after seeing this.

"So what if I did? I don't see anything wrong with giving the family heirloom to a family member, and he's already my husband," Wu Jingjing responded with a calm expression on her face.

"What husband!? When was the wedding?! The two of you aren't even married!" Wu Jiang retorted.

"A wedding is only a ceremony. Since that's the case, I am indeed married to him, as we already had a ceremony in our own way; it was very intense and passionate," Wu Jingjing said with a calm face.

Wu Jiang nearly coughed up a mouthful of blood after hearing her suggestive words.

"The Demon Slaying Sword slaying the Black Demon... It's quite fitting, don't you think?" Su Yang said to Lian Heng.

"Don't get full of yourself! The fight hasn't even started yet!" Lian Heng shouted at him.

Su Yang merely smiled at him.

"Are the two of you ready to fight?" Wu Jiang asked them a moment later.

"Yes!" Lian Heng shouted with enthusiasm.

However, Su Yang said, "Give me a moment."

He then drew a small circle around his feet with the Demon Slaying Sword before speaking in a calm voice, "Okay, we are ready to start."

"What the heck are you doing?" Lian Heng frowned upon seeing this with an ominous feeling in his heart.

Chapter 662 - Unfathomable Arrogance

"Can't you tell by looking?" Su Yang said after hearing Lian Heng's question.

"This is my circle, and if I take even a single step outside of this circle during the fight, I will count this battle as my loss."

"What?!"

Lian Heng and the spectators immediately exclaimed in shock.

"How dare you look down on me in such a manner!" Lian Heng roared with a fuming expression on his face.

"Looking down on you? That is not possible, as you cannot look down on something that has been nothing since the beginning," Su Yang spoke with a nonchalant face.

"YOU WILL F.U.C.K.I.N.G REGRET THIS!!!" Lian Heng roared before exploding with intense Sword Intent.

Crack *Crack* *Crack*

The Sword Intent emitted by Lian Heng was so intense that deep cuts were appearing around him on the stage, looking as though there were invisible swords flying around him.

"This young man... I am speechless..." Lian Li mumbled in a low voice, as this is her first time encountering someone so arrogant and domineering.

'Where is his confidence coming from? Although he managed to beat Lian Heng pretty badly before, this is an entirely different battlefield with different rules. Lian Heng is a genius swordmaster who managed to fully control his Sword Intent at 33 years old. Not even I would dare to claim that I could defeat Lian

Heng without moving from that circle! Furthermore, I cannot sense any Sword Intent or Sword Qi from this guy!' Lian Li pondered with a curious expression on her face, wondering if Su Yang can really achieve what he boasted.

How can a mere nobody with zero known achievements or reputation have such confidence before someone like Lian Heng? It was simply incomprehensible to Lian Li.

"Jingjing... I am at loss for words. Do you even believe that he could win this yourself?" Wu Jiang asked her.

"Of course," she responded without hesitation.

"Haaa... Your blindness is worse than I'd thought." Wu Jiang shook his head in disappointment.

On the stage, Su Yang raised his eyebrows after feeling Lian Heng's powerful Sword Intent, and he spoke, "After seeing your Sword Intent, I have realized my mistake and would like to apologize..."

Su Yang then used his sword to draw another circle around his feet, which was even smaller than the previous circle he drew.

"I had vastly overestimated your abilities, and I would like to apologize for that," he said after drawing the circle.

"FUUUUCK YOU!"

Lian Heng's eyes immediately became bloodshot, and he took his first step towards Su Yang.

"Sword Sparrow!"

Lian Heng swung his sword at Su Yang a dozen times in the blink of an eye, and a dozen black arc lights flew towards Su Yang at a frightening speed.

Seeing this, Su Yang tightly gripped the Demon Slaying Sword and casually swung it.

Whoosh!

A massive red arc of light appeared from the swing and collided with Lian Heng's attacks.

Crash! Crash! Crash!

The black arc lights were shattered into countless fragments the moment it touched the red arc of light without any signs of resistance, looking like they were eggs trying to smash a rock.

"What?!" Lian Heng immediately stopped running at Su Yang to dodge the massive arc of light flying at him, feeling his heart beating like crazy afterward.

After barely dodging the attack, Lian Heng turned to look at Su Yang with wide eyes filled with disbelief.

How did he manage to release such a powerful sword attack when he's not even emitting Sword Intent?

"What just happened?" Even Lian Li and Wu Jiang could not understand what had just happened and stared at Su Yang with a gawking expression.

"Is that all you can do with your Sword Intent? How disappointing..." Su Yang asked him with a bored expression on his face.

"I am just getting started!" Lian Heng shouted before swinging the Black Demon Sword viciously.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Hundreds of black arc lights flew at Su Yang, blocking his view.

"..."

Su Yang watched the arc of lights flying at him with a nonchalant expression on his face.

He suddenly raised his hand, but it was not the hand he was holding his sword with, and in front of countless shocked gazes, he covered his mouth as he yawned.

'What the heck is he doing?! Does he plan on blocking so many sword lights with his body?!' Wu Jiang cried inwardly, and he prepared to rush onto the stage to save him.

However, before Wu Jiang could even move his body, the black arc of lights was sliced into countless fragments before they could even get close to Su Yang's body, almost as though they were cut by an invisible sword.

"WHAT?!"

Lian Heng's eyes widened with shock when all of his sword intent were destroyed before they could even reach Su Yang, who was only yawning at that moment.

"..."

The place was dead silent, almost as though the entire world was quiet at this moment.

"Impossible! You must be cheating with some kind of treasure! Why can't my Sword Intent reach you when you are not even emitting Sword Intent?!" Lian Heng quickly accused him of cheating.

"Me? Cheating? Very well..." Su Yang then turned to look at Wu Jingjing before tossing at her his storage rings and said, "Hold them for me."

However, he was not finished. After handing his storage rings to Wu Jingjing, Su Yang began stripping his own clothes until only his underwear remained.

"Heavens! Look at that flawless body!"

"If only I can go on that stage and lick his body right now..."

The disciples stared at Su Yang's practically n.a.k.e.d body with dropping jaws, especially the female disciples who were essentially drooling with l.u.s.t at his perfect body at this moment.

"If you are not satisfied, should I also take off my last piece of armor? I don't mind fighting you n.a.k.e.d, as I am quite confident in my own body." Su Yang said to him with a calm expression on his face, seemingly unfazed despite his appearance.

Chapter 663 - An Incomprehensible Fight

"Y-Y-You! How can you fight in a sword battle with such a vulgar appearance?! Do you have no shame?!" Lian Li pointed at Su Yang and yelled at him with a blushing face, as this is her first time seeing a man revealing more than just their neck and arm skin.

Su Yang turned to look at Lian Li and spoke with a nonchalant expression on his face, "Shame? Why would I feel ashamed of my own body? And if you don't like it, you can stop looking."

"Tch!" Lian Li sucked her teeth in anger. How could she possibly not watch when she hasn't understood how his powers worked yet?

"This young man..." Wu Jiang shook his head, but there was no rule stating that one cannot fight while being n.a.k.e.d. Furthermore, he also suspected Su Yang of cheating, so he would actually prefer it if Su Yang fought n.a.k.e.d.

"Anyway, let us continue our sword battle," Su Yang said to Lian Heng, who had been standing there with a dazed look on his face.

"You don't have to tell me! Heavenly Sword Cleave!"

Lian Heng raised his sword high into the air before cleaving it downwards, looking as though he wanted to split a mountain.

Whoosh!

A massive black light resembling the blade of a sword appeared in the air and fell towards Su Yang, bearing down immense pressure around him, yet he still somehow manages to hold an unimpressed expression on his face.

"When will you learn that your Sword Intent will have no effect on me?" Su Yang shook his head. "You really are a slow learner..."

In just a moment, the black blade reached Su Yang's shoulders and threatened to slice his body in half. However, for some unknown reason, Wu Jiang did not make even the slightest movement and silently stared at Su Yang with wide eyes, almost as though he was trying to stare a hole into his body.

Clang!

The moment the black blade touched Su Yang's shoulder, almost like a mirror falling onto the floor, it shattered into many tiny pieces.

"What?! How is this possible?! What kind of trick are you using?!" Lian Heng felt like he was dreaming after witnessing the impossible before his eyes for the third time, even feeling like he was going to go crazy.

'Impossible! I have been watching his every movement, yet there weren't any suspicious movements from him! He is really just standing there and doing nothing! But that does not explain how he's able to break Lian Heng's sword techniques!' Wu Jiang pondered with a deep frown.

Even with his vast experience as the Sword Saint, he was unable to comprehend the situation before him, and he has never felt so disoriented in his entire life.

'Damn! Just what on earth is he doing?! I am going crazy just trying to figure it out!' Lian Li felt like pulling on her own hair from the frustration of not being able to understand a single thing, feeling like she was inside a thick fog without any guide.

'I have never seen anything like this before... It feels like Lian Heng's Sword Intent are withdrawing from Su Yang instead of being destroyed by him, almost like they are afraid of hurting him...' Wu Jingjing pondered with a curious gaze.

'And what happened to his Sword Qi? How come I can't feel it like in the past? Is he hiding it on purpose?'

As everyone pondered what had just happened and why Lian Heng's attacks cannot even reach Su Yang, much less hurt him, Su Yang said to Lian Heng, "I think I have proved my point— that you will never be able to defeat me in your current state."

"Why?! Why can't my attacks reach you?! Under my authority as the crown prince, I demand you to answer me!" Lian Heng cried out loud, demanding an answer.

However, Su Yang merely shook his head and said, "You won't understand even if I told you."

"F.u.c.k! I don't believe that my blade cannot reach you! If Sword Intent does not work, let's see if you can block my real sword with your body!" Lian Heng roared before rushing at Su Yang with the Black Demon Sword in his grasp.

"Die for me!"

The Black Demon Sword glowed with a dark light before Lian Heng suddenly thrust it at Su Yang's chest, his aura radiating with killing intent.

Su Yang smiled at this, and right before the Black Demon Sword reached his chest, his arm flickered, catching the black blade with his bare arms.

"What?!"

Lian Heng cried out loud before retreating, but alas, when he tried to pull his sword, he realized that it would not budge even slightly.

The smile on Su Yang's face suddenly turned into a grin, and a second later, an immense amount of Sword Intent gushed from his body.

"AAAAAHHHHH!"

Lian Heng screamed in terror as many sword cuts appeared on his body the instant Su Yang released his Sword Intent.

"Your Highness!" Wu Jiang shouted in a terrified voice, yet he did not move from his spot, as everything happened so fast that it was already too late by the time he could react.

Su Yang reclaimed his Sword Intent after releasing it for a brief second, and Lian Heng collapsed onto the floor the next moment with blank eyes and over a hundred sword injuries on his body. However, luckily for him, they were only minor injuries and nothing life-threatening.

When Wu Jiang saw this, he released a deep and long sigh of relief, as he cannot imagine what would happen to the Holy Sword Academy if Su Yang had killed Lian Heng at that moment.

'What powerful Sword Intent...' Lian Li held a serious frown on her beautiful face after experiencing Su Yang's Sword Intent that made her heart skip a beat even though she was on the other side of the stage, and she cannot help but wonder what it would feel to face such a powerful Sword Intent head-on.

After a moment of pondering, Lian Li nodded to herself with a resolute expression on her face before jumping onto the stage, dumbfounding everybody there.

Chapter 664 - Slightly Better Than Lian Heng

'What powerful Sword Intent...'

Even though it was only for a brief moment, Su Yang's Sword Intent had caused Wu Jiang's heart to skip a beat.

Furthermore, Wu Jiang was confident that Su Yang had not used his full power just now. If Su Yang were to use all of his Sword Intent, there was no doubt that Lian Heng would've died.

'Just how much more power is he hiding?' Wu Jiang stared at Su Yang with a complicated frown on his face.

When Wu Jingjing noticed her father's perplexed expression, she silently smiled to herself, *'If you think that was impressive, just wait until he uses 'that' sword technique.'*

Meanwhile, Lian Li suddenly jumped onto the stage, shocking everybody there.

"Her Highness just entered the stage! Does she plan on avenging her junior brother?!" The disciples watched with nearly uncontrollable excitement, as they rarely got to see Lian Li fight.

"Somebody get that disgraceful dog out of the stage!" Lian Li suddenly shouted in a commanding voice, and a sect elder immediately went to bring the unconscious Lian Heng off the stage.

Once they were alone on the stage, Lian Li retrieved a sword with a blue blade that emitted a chilling aura from her storage ring and pointed it at Su Yang before speaking, "Do you dare to accept my challenge?"

"Are you trying to avenge him?" Su Yang asked her with a calm expression on his face.

"Revenge? You are mistaken. I couldn't care less even if you removed his limbs. However, you have openly challenged the Lian Family and even slapped our face before so many people, so I am going to punish you for that," she spoke with a cold expression on her fairy-like face.

"Is that so? But I don't like hurting women— especially the beautiful ones without a damn good reason."

"What kind of excuse is that? Are you running away from me after barking so loudly not too long ago? If I recall correctly, you said that if I had a problem, I could step onto the stage, and that is exactly what I am doing, or are you going to go back on your words? Maybe you are actually a coward behind that facade filled with confidence!"

"..."

Su Yang narrowed his eyes at Lian Li and remained silent for a moment before nodding, "Very well, since you insist on fighting me, I will accept your challenge."

And then he continued, "However, since this is a challenge, there will be a loser and a winner, and in such cases, the loser usually has to sacrifice something."

Hearing his words, Lian Li quickly responded, "If you can defeat me in a sword battle, I will act as though everything that happened today never happened, and I will turn a blind eye to your disrespectful behavior towards the Lian Family just this time."

"However, if you lose this challenge, you will have to bear the full responsibility for disrespecting the Lian Family without uttering a single complaint no matter the punishment."

Su Yang nodded, "That sounds reasonable. However, to make this challenge more fun, why don't we add a few more rules?"

"What are you thinking?" Lian Li frowned, feeling an ominous feeling about the smile that just appeared on Su Yang's face.

"It's quite simple, actually. Since I only dare to cut women who are my enemy, I will defeat you without harming a single hair on your body. If I injure your skin even a little with my sword or any sword techniques, it will automatically be my defeat."

"What...? Are you serious?" Lian Li looked at him with wide eyes. Does he actually plan on defeating her without hurting her? Is that even possible?

"Of course. And if I manage to achieve such a feat, in addition to your previous words, you'll also have dinner with me tonight," Su Yang spoke with a handsome smile on his face.

"..."

"..."

"..."

The entire place turned silent after Su Yang's last sentence, and every disciple at the arena was staring at Su Yang with disbelief on their faces.

"The audacity!" A loud voice boomed.

However, it was no Lian Li who spoke just now. Instead, such words came from Wu Jiang's mouth.

"Are you f.u.c.k.i.n.g with me right now?! How dare you court another woman—Her Highness, no less—in front of Jingjing, who gave birth to your child?! Does the word 'fidelity' not exist in your world?!" Wu Jiang shouted at Su Yang while pointing fingers.

"And you, Jingjing! Are you still going to defend him after seeing this?! This is the kind of man he really is!" Wu Jiang turned to look at her afterward.

"..."

Wu Jingjing was speechless. If her father is already this angry in this situation, one can only imagine his reaction once he learns about the identity of Zhu Jiayi's father and all of Su Yang's other women.

"There's no point explaining it to you when you are this emotional, father," Wu Jingjing said to him before ignoring him again.

"You— I don't care anymore!" Wu Jiang could feel his blood boiling from anger at this moment.

Meanwhile, Lian Li silently stared at Su Yang with a deep frown on her face. Despite her beauty, this is actually her first time being courted by a man due to her immense status, much less by a man that's partially n.a.k.e.d who also dared to challenge and disrespect her family in public.

"I don't know what you're thinking inside that messed up head of yours, but if you really think you can defeat me without harming me, there is clearly something wrong with you."

"You can think whatever you want about me, all I want to know is whether or not you agree to the additional rule," Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"I agree! If you can really defeat me, much less accomplish that without harming me, I will be willing to do whatever you want me to!" Lian Li suddenly waved her sword with intense Sword Intent exuding from her aura, and there was even a hint of Sword Qi within her aura, causing the atmosphere there to change drastically.

"I guess you're slightly better than your brother," Su Yang said with a calm expression on his face after seeing her Sword Intent.

Chapter 665 - What Do You Think You Are Doing to Me, You Damn Pervert?!

"Only slightly better?" Lian Li frowned after hearing his words.

Lian Heng would not be able to defeat her even if she were to fight him while blindfolded, yet he claims that she was only 'slightly' better than Lian Heng? What kind of nonsense is this?

"Since there appears to be some problem with your sights, allow me to open them for you!" Lian Li suddenly rushed at Su Yang with Sword Intent gushing from her body like an aura.

"Taste my Glacial Blades!"

The blue sword in her hands emitted such a cold temperature that everywhere it went, a trail of ice would appear.

Boom!

Su Yang used the Demon Slayer Sword to intercept Lian Li's strike, and the moment their swords touched each other, a massive explosion occurred from the impact.

An extremely cold breeze suddenly assaulted Su Yang, freezing the surface of his skin in an instant until nearly his entire body from the neck down was frozen solid.

Lian Li retreated immediately after the attack and looked at Su Yang's frozen body with a grin on her face, "You don't look so good. Why don't you put your clothes on before we continue?"

"This feeling isn't too bad. It's actually quite refreshing, almost like taking a cold bath under the blazing sun," Su Yang said, still with a calm expression on his face.

A second later, his body began turning red, and the ice around his body quickly melted.

"What did you do just now?" Lian Li frowned after seeing how Su Yang escaped her technique with such ease.

"Because of my unique cultivation technique, my body contains extremely potent Yang Qi. If you want to freeze my body, you'll need something colder— something cold enough to freeze the entire Jade Sea."

'What the hell? Why does his body contain so much Yang Qi? That's pure recklessness!' Lian Li could not comprehend why any Cultivator would want such powerful Yang Qi in their body, as she was not familiar with Dual Cultivators, much less a Dual Cultivator of Su Yang's caliber.

And from her knowledge, having too much Yang Qi for any Cultivator is an extremely dangerous situation, and one must find the perfect balance for their spiritual energy, or they will only harm themselves.

'Just what kind of cultivation technique is he cultivating? How can he cultivate his Sword Intent to such a high level with such a messed up body?' Even Wu Jiang could not understand the situation.

However, this is mostly due to the nature of the Holy Central Continent that lacked Dual Cultivators, as there were no sects that would practice Dual Cultivation when swords and medicine dominated the Holy Central Continent.

"Anyway, are you done showing off? If you are, it's my turn to attack," Su Yang said to her, treating this entire fight as though it was a joke and they were only playing.

"Are you making fun of me?!" Lian Li shouted angrily before running at him again.

"If Sword Intent does not work on you, let's see if you can handle Sword Qi!"

The aura around Lian Li suddenly cracked, becoming increasingly intense and sharp, almost as if she'd turned into a real sword.

"Haaaaaaa!"

Lian Li shouted at the top of her lungs as she struck Su Yang with nothing but her Sword Qi and her sword.

Seeing this, Su Yang showed a mysterious smile on his face, and his aura also exploded with Sword Qi.

"What?!" Lian Li's eyes widened with shock after seeing Su Yang explode with Sword Qi, but it was too late for her to stop her attack.

Clang!

"Ah!"

Lian Li was sent flying by the impact of their clash, but she managed to recover her balance mid-air before returning to the ground.

"I-Impossible..." Lian Li stared at Su Yang with a dazed expression, seemingly in disbelief.

"H-He can also use Sword Qi?!" Wu Jiang held a shocked expression on his face as his gaze stared at the sharp aura around Su Yang. "How did he conceal such powerful Sword Qi— to the extent where even I was unable to sense it?!"

He then turned to look at Wu Jingjing who was smiling and asked her, "Did you know about this the entire time?"

"I don't know what you're talking about, father. I am blind, after all." Wu Jingjing spoke with a nonchalant expression on her face.

"..."

Wu Jiang was speechless at her petty response.

"W-What a surprise... I didn't expect you to also have Sword Qi..." Lian Li spoke with a weird expression on her face.

"Why are you so surprised? It's only Sword Qi," Su Yang said to her with a calm face.

"Only Sword Qi, you say? There are only three individuals who can use Sword Qi on this entire continent! Master Wu, the Grand Elder, and me! And I am barely scratching the surface in terms of knowledge for Sword Qi!" Lian Li said to him, and she continued, "Just who are you, really?! How can you use Sword Intent and Sword Qi while having such a messed up body?!"

"That's quite rude of you, to say that I have a messed up body." Su Yang shook his head.

"Anyway, since you have nothing else to show, it's my turn to attack."

Su Yang suddenly began walking towards Lian Li in small and casual steps, looking as though he was taking a stroll in the park.

"Che! Don't underestimate me!" Instead of trying to defend herself, Lian Li actually approached Su Yang in an aggressive manner.

However, before she could even take two steps, the Demon Slaying Sword in Su Yang's grasp suddenly flickered, disappearing for a split second.

The next second, Lian Li felt as though her body suddenly got lighter, causing her to stop moving and look down.

"?!?!?!?"

When Lian Li realized that some of her clothes had been chipped away, revealing her smooth skin, she immediately turned to look at Su Yang with a fuming expression, "W-What do you think you are doing to me, you damn pervert?!"

Chapter 666 - Public Humiliation

When the disciples in the arena realized what had happened, their eyes widened with shock, especially the male disciples, and they stared at Lian Li's peerless figure like their life depended on it despite knowing that they could be punished for even daring to take a peek.

Even Wu Jiang was shocked speechless by Su Yang's daring actions, and he finally realized what Su Yang meant by defeating her without hurting her! If he cannot harm her body, he can simply force her to withdraw! And what better way to make a woman withdraw than to strip them n.a.k.e.d in front of tens of thousands of spectators, publicly humiliating her?!

"Do you have no shame, you pervert?! How dare you even think of using such lowly tactics against royalty! I swear to god I will have your head for this!" Lian Li shouted at him with her body trembling from anger.

However, Su Yang merely shrugged his shoulders and said, "What else can I do? I only strike women that are my enemies."

"Then I am your enemy! No! You are my enemy!" Lian Li shouted before running at him again.

"Die for me, you damn pervert!"

Lian Li suddenly activated her Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base, strengthening the Sword Qi aura even more.

The blue sword in her grasp danced elegantly, and in the blink of an eye, Lian Li released a torrent of sword attacks at Su Yang.

"Your movements are being affected by your emotions— you should calm down," Su Yang said to her as he casually dodged her sword attacks.

"Shut up!" Lian Li ignored his words and continued to attack him without stopping.

Seeing this, Su Yang released his Sword Qi again, and since Lian Li was much closer to him this time, even larger holes appeared on her clothes a second later, revealing even more of her skin to the public.

"Ooooooh!"

The male disciples cheered for Su Yang inwardly after seeing this.

"Aaaah!"

Lian Li shrieked as she jumped away from Su Yang.

However, Su Yang did not allow her to escape and followed her this time.

"Stay away from me, you damn pervert!" Lian Li frantically swung her sword at Su Yang without any technique or elegance behind her movements while running away, looking like a scared little girl being chased by a monster.

"Do you give up? If you withdraw, I will stop chipping away your clothes. However, if you refuse defeat, you will sooner or later have to fight me while being n.a.k.e.d!" Su Yang laughed as he chased after her around the stage.

The spectators were speechless. What the heck are they watching right now? What happened to the sword battle?

"What on earth is even happening...?" Wu Jiang mumbled in a dazed voice.

Even Wu Jingjing couldn't help but chuckle at this silly situation.

After running a few laps around the stage, Lian Li suddenly tripped over herself and fell on the floor.

When Su Yang saw this, his eyes flickered with a vicious light.

Whoosh!

An immense amount of Sword Qi that caused the entire world to tremble suddenly exploded from Su Yang's body, catching everybody off guard with shock and awe.

It was a frightening amount of Sword Qi that caused even Wu Jiang's heart to tremble from fear, much less Lian Li, who was directly below such a terrifying pressure.

"Die!"

Su Yang raised his sword and swung it directly at Lian Li's neck.

"STOP! YOU CAN'T KILL HER!"

Wu Jiang screamed in a panicked voice, but alas, his reaction was delayed by Su Yang's explosive Sword Qi.

"Ah..."

Lian Li's life flashed before her eyes with the feeling of death looming right in front of her, and she lost consciousness before Su Yang's sword could even reach her.

Clang!

The Demon Slaying Sword stabbed into the ground directly next to Lian Li, barely missing her neck, and the entire stage was cleanly split in half as a result.

"..."

The arena turned dead silent for an entire minute as the people there tried to comprehend what had just happened.

"Hm?"

After pulling the Demon Slaying Sword from the ground, Su Yang noticed a wet and warm feeling by his feet, causing him to look down.

And to his surprise, a small puddle of translucent water had suddenly appeared beside his feet out of thin air.

"I guess I went overboard in trying to scare her..." Su Yang mumbled to himself after realizing that he'd scared Lian Li to the point where she'd not only fell unconscious but also pissed herself.

"Toss me my stuff!" Su Yang turned to look at Wu Jingjing and said to her.

"Y-Yes!" Wu Jingjing snapped out of her daze and tossed his clothes and storage ring at him.

Once he had his stuff again, Su Yang retrieved a pair of Profound Blossom Sect's disciple robes from his storage ring and laid it over the unconscious Lian Li as though it was a blanket before putting his own clothes on.

And then right before the gazes of tens of thousands of Holy Sword Academy disciples, Su Yang walked in front of Wu Jiang, their Sect Master, and spoke in a calm voice, "You are the only one left, father-in-law."

"..."

Wu Jiang stared at Su Yang with a serious frown on his face. Although he did not take Su Yang seriously at first, after witnessing Su Yang's profound Sword Qi that caused even his heart to tremble, he no longer has a choice but to look at Su Yang as a real threat to him, the Sword Saint!

"Are you serious about challenging me to a sword battle?" Wu Jiang asked him after a moment of silence.

He then looked at Lian Heng, who is still being treated by the sect elders, and then at Lian Li, who was lying unconscious on the stage.

"Do you have any idea what you've done today? You have just publicly humiliated Emperor Lian's beloved children before tens of thousands of people, yet you still want to fight me? What exactly are you trying to accomplish here?"

"I didn't humiliate them—they were the ones begging to be humiliated by me, and if this Emperor Lian has a problem with that, he can complain to my face. In fact, I will be meeting him later," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"What? You're going to meet with His Majesty later?" Wu Jiang stared at him with wide eyes, clearly at loss for words.

Chapter 667 - One Free Attack

"For what purpose are you trying to meet with Emperor Lian?" Wu Jiang asked him with a frown. Unless one has a deep background or was recommended by someone close to Emperor Lian, it was nearly impossible to meet with him.

"Don't worry about it; it's none of your business," Su Yang responded with a nonchalant face.

"..."

"Just who are you, really?" Wu Jiang asked him a moment later.

"Me? I am the man who i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed your daughter." Su Yang responded with a serious expression on his face, dumbfounding Wu Jiang.

After a moment of silence, Wu Jiang spoke with profound light in his eyes, "Very well! Since you dared to challenge me, the Sword Saint, to a sword battle, I will accept your challenge!"

Wu Jiang then flew and hovered above the destroyed stage and looked down on Su Yang, "What are you waiting for? Come up here!"

A smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he flew into the air until he was a dozen meters away from Wu Jiang.

"Let's alter the rules for this match," Wu Jiang suddenly said.

"What do you have in mind?"

"In this sword battle, we are not allowed to move, nor are we allowed to use our swords or sword techniques."

When the spectators heard Wu Jiang's words, they looked at each other with puzzled looks on their faces.

"They cannot move, use their swords or sword techniques? Then how are they supposed to fight each other?"

"There's only one thing they can use— their Sword Intent! This is a genuine sword battle where one can only depend on their Sword Intent!"

Su Yang immediately realized what Wu Jiang was trying to do and he nodded his head without hesitation, "You want to fight me using only Sword Intent? I don't mind. In fact, it makes this even more exciting."

"Not just Sword Intent. Sword Qi is also allowed." Wu Jiang said.

Su Yang nodded before returning the Demon Slaying Sword to Wu Jingjing.

"Good luck, Su Yang! Show my father what it means to be a frog in a well!" Wu Jingjing shouted to him after catching the Demon Slaying Sword.

"A frog in a well? Me?" Wu Jiang looked at her with disbelief in his eyes. How could she say such a thing to her own father?

"Hahaha... Don't worry, I shall open the eyes of every person that is watching this today and show them what it means to be a real swordmaster, and I am going to show them what a true Sword Saint looks like."

Su Yang then pointed at Wu Jiang and spoke with a cold gaze, "You do not have qualifications to call yourself a Sword Saint, and you are at best an average swordmaster who grasped the understanding of Sword Qi by sheer luck, but you have not yet mastered it."

"What?! The audacity!"

"Who the hell do you think you are?! How dare you claim the Sect Master doesn't deserve the title of Sword Saint!?"

"Who are you calling fake swordmasters?! Don't get ahead of yourself just because you defeated His Highness and Her Highness! The Sword Saint is on a whole other level!"

The sect elders and the disciples in the arena immediately began cursing at Su Yang after his bold claims.

"You dare to question my title of Sword Saint?" Wu Jiang looked at Su Yang with bloodshot eyes, as he has never been disrespected to such an immense degree.

"You, who cannot even figure out why their Sword Intent did not affect me, dare to claim the title of Sword Saint? One can only imagine the outrage it would cause if you were in the Divine Heavens..." Su Yang shook his head at Wu Jiang.

"Divine Heavens...?" Wu Jiang raised an eyebrow. This is his first time hearing of such a place.

"Anyways, go ahead. Since you and everyone here seem so confident in your title of Sword Saint, I'll give you one chance to prove to me that you're worthy of such a title. One move— you get one chance to attack me with whatever you've got and I won't block it."

The spectators gasped in shock after hearing his words. Just how much does he look down on others? Does his arrogance even have a limit? Not even Emperor Lian would so brazenly give the Sword Saint one free attack during a sword battle!

"You're giving me one free attack?" Wu Jiang mumbled in a low voice before he burst out laughing, "Hahahaha! I have never seen such insanity!"

After laughing for a moment, he suddenly stopped and spoke with a grim expression on his face, "While I would normally not lower myself to such standards, I will make this an exception just for you, brat who needs to be put in his place!"

Following his words, an immense amount of Sword Intent erupted from Wu Jiang's body, and his aura shot up to the sky, almost like he wanted to split the heavens in half with his Sword Intent alone.

"I have never seen such a powerful Sword Intent before! As expected of the Sword Saint!"

"The Sect Master's Sword Intent is powerful enough to split a mountain in half! That young man is definitely regretting his decision to give the Sect Master one free attack now!"

While the disciples expressed their awe for Wu Jiang's Sword Intent, Su Yang merely shook his head and spoke in a disappointed voice, "This is why you're not qualified to bear the title of Sword Saint. You are just like that idiot who doesn't learn. You have already seen that Sword Intent does not work on me, yet you're still going to use Sword Intent? What a waste. At this rate, I can give you a hundred free attacks and you still won't defeat me."

"Don't compare my Sword Intent to His Highness's Sword Intent! I don't mean to be disrespectful to him, but my Sword Intent is on another level in comparison— like heaven and earth!"

However, Su Yang sighed, "No matter how strong your Sword Intent is, at the end of the day, it is still only Sword Intent..."

Chapter 668 - Spirit Heaven's Sword Emperor

"Enough talking! We'll see whether or not my Sword Intent will have an effect on you right now!" Wu Jiang roared before unleashing his Sword Intent, and the image of a translucent sword appeared out of thin air.

Seeing this translucent blade cleaving towards his body, Su Yang reenacted his fight with Lian Heng by standing there and letting Wu Jiang's Sword Intent attack his defenseless body.

"Heavens! He's really planning on taking the Sect Master's Sword Intent with his body!"

"He's insane! This is what a real madman looks like!"

The disciples exclaimed.

"Su Yang..." Wu Jingjing watched with wide eyes as the Sword Intent quickly reached Su Yang.

And the instant the Sword Intent touched Su Yang's body—

Clang!

The translucent sword created by Wu Jiang's Sword Intent immediately crumbled into countless pieces before disappearing into thin air.

"..."

The place was so silent that it seemed as though the entire world was quiet right now, and everybody was staring at Su Yang with their eyes popping out of their sockets. As for Wu Jiang, he merely stood there with an empty expression on his face, looking like he was daydreaming.

"Did you expect a different outcome? I'm sorry to disappoint you." Su Yang said to Wu Jiang in a calm voice.

"Why aren't you responding, father-in-law? Are you not satisfied with the results? You can go ahead and try as many times as you want—"

"Shut the hell up!"

Wu Jiang suddenly interrupted Su Yang with a loud roar, and his aura exploded with Sword Qi.

"I don't know what kind of trick you're using to block our Sword Intent but I do not believe that you can do the same with Sword Qi!"

"Taste my Sword Qi!"

Wu Jiang violently waved his sleeves, and a thousand translucent swords appeared in the air before flying towards Su Yang.

'Sword Qi, huh.' A mysterious grin appeared on Su Yang's face, and to everybody's surprise, he suddenly closed his eyes.

However, right as the translucent swords were millimeters from piercing his body, Su Yang suddenly snapped his eyes open and shouted in a powerful voice, "SCRAM!"

A profound ripple that emitted a divine and otherworldly aura was suddenly released from his body and swept the entire arena.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The thousands of Sword Qi created by Wu Jiang shattered the instant they even got close to this ripple, and even Wu Jiang was sent flying into the distance after touching this ripple, coughing up a mouthful of blood afterward.

"W-What in the name of heavens is this unfathomable feeling?!" Wu Jiang ignored the pain in his body and cried out loud.

"M-my sword! My sword is trembling!"

When someone at the arena shouted this out loud, every person there that was carrying a sword turned to look at their sword to see their sword trembling as well, almost like the swords were shaking in excitement.

"D-Did that young man cause this phenomenon with his aura?!" One of the more experienced sect elders there speculated.

In the midst of the uproar, Wu Jiang shouted at Su Yang, "What did you do just now?! Your aura feels like Sword Intent but that's clearly not Sword Intent! It also resembles Sword Qi yet it clearly isn't Sword Qi! What kind of aura is that?!"

Su Yang looked at Wu Jiang with a calm yet sharp gaze, and he spoke in a slow but clear voice, "When it comes to the Dao of Swords and becoming a swordmaster, Sword Intent is merely the beginning. Once one's Sword Intent reaches a certain level, they will be able to learn Sword Qi."

"However, Sword Qi is not even close to the limit of the sword path, and above Sword Qi we have Sword Will— where one can control the will of swords, which includes Sword Intent and Sword Qi."

"Sword Will? Something that's above even Sword Qi?" Wu Jiang listened to this new term with a dazed expression on his face.

"And in front of a swordmaster who can use Sword Will, all Sword Intent and Sword Qi will become useless, hence why neither Sword Intent nor Sword Qi can touch me, much less hurt me."

"Furthermore, Sword Will is not something one can see with their bare eyes, and unless you grasp the concept of Sword Will, you won't be able to sense it no matter how much experience you have with Sword Intent or Sword Qi."

"There are also many levels of Sword Will, but I won't get into that here, as that will only be a waste of breath. However, here is what I will say— Unless you can use the highest level of Sword Will, much less Sword Will itself, don't you dare call yourself a Sword Saint."

Su Yang then swept the crowd with a cold gaze, "And for all of you who believe you only need to know Sword Intent to become a swordmaster... you have no idea how foolish and ignorant-sounding you are. Being able to use Sword Intent only means you have managed to step into the world of the swords— you are still nowhere near the level of a swordmaster, as you would need to know Sword Qi before you can even be considered as a swordmaster at the lowest level."

"J-Just who are you, really?" Wu Jiang asked him after a long moment of silence.

"I have been called many names and titles throughout my life, but for those who study the Dao of Swords, they often refer to me as Spirit Heaven's Sword Emperor," Su Yang spoke with a domineering aura around him.

"Spirit Heaven's... S-Sword Emperor?" Wu Jiang stared at Su Yang with a gawking look on his face. Su Yang's domineering title made his title as Sword Saint seem almost insignificant!

Su Yang then continued, "Anyway, do you wish to continue this sword battle? If you still think you can defeat me, I will gladly show you what one can achieve with Sword Will!"

"..."

Wu Jiang did not immediately respond and hovered in the air with a pondering expression.

Chapter 669 - Admitting Defeat

'As much as I want to see for myself what his Sword Will can do, I have this ominous feeling in my gut that's telling me to retreat from this sword battle and admit defeat...' Wu Jiang pondered with a deep frown on his face.

In the midst of Wu Jiang's thoughts, Su Yang suddenly spoke, "Ah, I forgot to mention this but due to my insufficient cultivation base, I do not have perfect control over my Sword Will, so if I accidentally kill you or destroy this sect, you can't blame me, okay?"

"L-Like hell I am going to let you do that!" Wu Jiang quickly exclaimed before saying, "Fine! I admit defeat! If neither Sword Intent nor Sword Qi works on you, I will lose regardless of what I do due to the rules of this battle!"

However, just as Wu Jiang prepared to leave, Su Yang stopped him and said, "Wait! You think you can leave just like that?"

"What else do you want from me?" Wu Jiang looked at him with a frown.

Su Yang did not respond and merely pointed at Wu Jingjing.

"..."

Wu Jiang immediately knew his intentions and took a deep breath before saying in a loud voice, "Wu Jingjing! I was wrong and you were right! It turns out that I was the blind one all long! Although he is a little arrogant and daring, he has the abilities to back his arrogance, and I cannot imagine someone more fitting than him to be your husband!"

"Father..." Wu Jingjing covered her mouth after hearing his words, even feeling the urge to cry.

"Are you satisfied now? I won't try to separate you two anymore, and regarding the issue with the Lian Family, I will have a talk with Emperor Lian later," Wu Jiang said to Su Yang. "Though, I cannot guarantee you that anything will come out of it."

"There's no need for you to speak with my father, Master!" Lian Li's voice suddenly resounded.

"Oh? You're awake already?" Su Yang looked at her with a smile on his face.

"Hmph! Even a dead man would wake up if he was buried so close to your fight!" Lian Li responded while wearing the Profound Blossom Sect's disciple robes on her body.

"Anyway, since I have lost my sword battle with him, regardless of how it happened, I will keep my words and act as though nothing had occurred today! However, that does not mean my father will sit still once he learns of this! If he does decide to punish him, I won't help him, as that is not a part of our agreement!"

After a moment of silence, Su Yang said, "I think you're missing something."

"..."

Lian Li immediately narrowed her eyes to glare at him with an annoyed gaze.

"I know! I will have dinner with you tonight!" she shouted sometime later.

The disciples there gasped in shock after they heard Lian Li's words. They didn't think that she would actually agree to such a ridiculous request.

'Hmph! Just you wait! I will make you regret humiliating me in front of so many people!' Lian Li thought to herself before disappearing from the area shortly later.

"What are you going to do now?" Wu Jiang asked Su Yang afterward.

"Who knows. Our purpose for coming here was to introduce myself to you, but since we have accomplished that and some more..." Su Yang then looked at Wu Jingjing and continued, "What should we do now?"

"There are still a few things I need to tell you, father. We should talk about it elsewhere." Wu Jingjing said.

Wu Jiang nodded before speaking in a loud voice, "You are all dismissed!"

Hearing the Sect Master's command, the disciples in the arena immediately dispersed and returned to whatever they were doing previously.

Sometime later, Wu Jiang brought Wu Jingjing and Su Yang to the Sect Master's quarters.

"So? What do you want to talk to me about?" Wu Jiang looked at them with a serious expression.

Wu Jingjing looked at Su Yang for a brief moment before speaking with a serious expression on her face, "I... I am going to leave the Holy Central Continent with Su Yang."

"Huh? W-Wait a second... I don't understand..." Wu Jiang looked at them with a dumbfounded look on his face. "Even if you are going to follow him, why do you have to leave the continent?"

"Because Su Yang is not from the Holy Central Continent, father. He came from the Eastern Continent," she said to him.

"T-The Eastern Continent?!?!!" Wu Jiang stood up from shock. "How the hell did you manage to cross the Jade Sea?"

"I flew here on a flying boat," he casually said.

"A flying boat...?" Wu Jiang quickly frowned. He can only recall another person who has such a treasure.

Su Yang smiled after seeing Wu Jiang's reaction, and he spoke, "Immortal Fairy Su Yue— you asked me if I knew her, right? I kind of lied to you."

"What?! So you are— you really are her husband?!" Wu Jiang exclaimed.

"Huh?" Wu Jingjing turned to look at Su Yang with wide eyes. "You... You were Immortal Fairy Su Yue's..."

"Oh, no. We're not married— that's just a story she made up. Though, we do have a special relationship," he briefly explained.

"B-But you know Immortal Fairy Su Yue?" Wu Jingjing stared at him with awe in her eyes, as she had been dying to meet the renowned Immortal Fairy.

"Where is she right now? Immortal Fairy Su Yue!" Wu Jiang suddenly asked him.

"She's in the Eastern Continent," he said.

"No wonder why nobody has seen her lately! Because she's actually on another continent!" Wu Jiang shook his head after realizing this.

"Anyway, you want to follow Su Yang back to the Eastern Continent? How often will you visit me? You think I'm going to let you take my granddaughter away from me without a fight?" Wu Jiang looked at her with narrowed eyes.

"Well... About that..." Wu Jingjing turned to look at Su Yang with a hopeless gaze.

Seeing this, Su Yang smiled and said, "Even though I am from the Eastern Continent, I do not actually belong to this world."

"Eh? What the hell do you mean by that?" Wu Jiang quickly asked.

Chapter 670 - Conquering Lian Li

Seeing Wu Jian's puzzled face, Su Yang spoke in a slow but clear voice, "In this vast and seemingly endless universe, there exist multiple worlds, and the world we are currently in is only a tiny world compared to the other worlds that exist beyond the starry sky, and I am someone who came from those worlds."

Su Yang did not even bother explaining to Wu Jiang about his reincarnation and made it seem as though he'd come from the starry night.

"Another world from beyond the starry sky...?" Wu Jiang stared at him with a gawking expression and his jaw dropped.

"That's right. I mentioned that I am referred to as Spirit Heaven's Sword Emperor by some people, right? Well, Spirit Heaven is where I am from, and it exists somewhere in the starry night."

"..."

After a long moment of silence, Wu Jiang silently stood up and walked to the window before staring at the darkened sky with an unfathomable expression on his face.

Sometime later, he turned to look at Su Yang and spoke in a low voice, "And you... You plan on taking Jingjing with you back to your own world?"

"Yes," Su Yang nodded without hesitation.

"Haaaaa..."

Wu Jiang released a long sigh before mumbling, "It appears that I have suffered not one but two major losses today..."

"Father..." Wu Jingjing looked at him with a heartfelt gaze.

"You don't have to say anything to me, Jingjing. I knew that you wouldn't be at my side forever, but I didn't expect you to leave this quickly," Wu Jiang said to her.

Wu Jiang then returned his focus to Su Yang, "I will only allow Wu Jingjing to follow you if you can promise me one thing— that you will protect her and Wu Min no matter what— even at the cost of your own life. If you cannot do that, then you will have to walk over my dead body before you can take her with you."

Hearing his threatening voice that wasn't very threatening at all, Su Yang laughed, "Are you looking down on me? I don't need anyone to tell me to protect my own women!"

Wu Jiang did not find any offense in his words and nodded with a resolute look on his face, "Good! Then I shall entrust my daughter to you!"

"Su Yang let's go to my living quarter for now," Wu Jingjing said to him after their business with Wu Jiang was finished.

Sometime later, Su Yang entered her room while Wu Jingjing went to put Wu Min to sleep, as it was getting late and she was nearly asleep by the time they returned home.

Once Wu Min was sound asleep, Wu Jingjing returned to Su Yang's side.

"Are you really trying to court Her Highness, Lian Li? Even after you humiliated her in public? Do you think you still have a chance with her?" Wu Jingjing asked him, not bothered by the fact that he was trying to court another woman in her presence, as she understood that was his nature.

"What do you think? Do you think I will be able to court her successfully after everything that has happened today?" he asked her.

"Hmm..." Wu Jingjing immediately began pondering with a serious expression on her face.

A moment later, she spoke in a low voice, "Her Highness... She's a difficult person to understand and impossible to predict. I don't know what she's thinking most of the time. However, I do know that she's incredibly dedicated to swords and that she doesn't like being around men."

"Is that so?" Su Yang nodded with a profound look on his face.

"But I think that's because she doesn't have much experience with men because of her status, as most men don't even dare to approach her, much less court her. In fact, you are the first person I have witnessed courting her."

"Though, I have a feeling that you'll be able to woo her," she chuckled and continued, "After all, you have this irresistible charm."

"You are making me blush," Su Yang said with a calm smile.

"Su Yang, why don't we have a bet?" Wu Jingjing suddenly said.

"Oh? You wanna gamble with me? Just so you know, I have never lost a bet in my life," he said with a prideful look on his face.

"You know the saying 'there's always a first time to everything'?"

"Of course, but the word 'impossible' also exists," he said with a smile.

"Hmph! We shall see about that!"

"Anyway, what do you want to bet on?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"Let's bet on how long it'll take you to conquer Her Highness's maiden heart," Wu Jingjing said with a grin on her face.

"How long will it take me to court her, huh?"

Wu Jingjing nodded and continued, "I will consider it a successful conquest if you managed to have s.e.x with her. So how long do you think it'll take you to conquer her?"

"..."

After a long moment of silence, he spoke with a confident look on his face, "It will happen before I have to meet with Emperor Lian."

"That fast?!" Wu Jingjing looked at him with wide eyes. "That's in two days counting today! You think you'll be able to conquer both her heart and body before tomorrow ends?"

"You think I can't?"

"Nobody would!" she quickly said. "Not only did you spit on the Lian Family and beat her younger brother today but you also humiliated her in such a fashion before thousands of people! I bet she's still angry at you right now! If you think you can court her in such a short time despite your disadvantages, I would like to see it with my very eyes!"

"Disadvantage?" A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he said, "Very well, I shall do my best to not disappoint you."

Meanwhile, inside Lian Li's living quarters, she stared at the red-colored medicine in her hands with a malicious smile on her face, "Just you wait, you damn pervert! I'll have my revenge on you soon!"

Chapter 671 - Dinner at Nine Spring Hall

Once the sky has darkened enough, Su Yang prepared to head to Lian Li's living quarters for dinner.

"Her Highness lives three blocks down and her house number should be house number 99," Wu Jingjing said to him.

"I understand." Su Yang nodded as he stepped outside.

"Good luck, Su Yang." Wu Jingjing said to him before he left.

A few minutes later, Su Yang found the building with the number 99 on the front door. He approached the entrance and knocked on it.

Lian Li opened the door a moment while wearing beautiful and luxurious clothes that enhanced her beauty significantly and said to him with a calm expression on her face, "So you're finally here, huh?"

"I'm sorry if I made you wait too long," he said.

"I don't mind."

"Where should we go for dinner?"

"I have already made reservations for us at the Nine Spring Hall, we can leave at any time." Lian Li said.

"Nine Spring Halls, huh? Okay."

Lian Li then stepped outside of her house and began flying away shortly later.

Seeing this, Su Yang silently followed her with a smile on his face.

A few minutes later, Su Yang said to her while they were in the air, "I didn't get the chance to say this back there, but you look very stunning in that outfit."

"Save your compliments for your wife. I am not going to be swayed by your honeyed words, and we are only going to eat dinner. If you were expecting something else then I am sorry— not."

"Whatever you say, Your Highness," Su Yang responded with a calm voice.

"It's too late to start respecting me now, as you have already trampled my face to an unrecoverable state in front of thousands of people..." Lian Li spoke in a cold voice.

Because of what happened during the sword battle, people are already giving her disrespectful nicknames such as 'Princess Piss Herself' and 'Silver River Princess' behind her back!

"..."

Su Yang decided not to say anything else and silently followed her to the Nine Spring Halls.

Once they reached the Nine Spring Halls, there were already many servants waiting outside the restaurant.

"Welcome to the Nine Spring Hall, Your Highness!"

The servants immediately lowered their heads to greet her.

"Your Highness, the Nine Spring Hall, and everyone here is greatly honored by your presence." Jiu Chun, the owner of the restaurant appeared a moment later and said to her.

"Take us to our room," Lian Li said to him.

"Right away!"

Jiu Chun glanced at Su Yang with a mysterious light in his eyes before turning around and leading them to the highest floor in the restaurant.

"..."

Su Yang did not miss Jiu Chun's odd gaze, and he silently pondered why Jiu Chun would look at him in such a manner.

A few minutes later, they reached the ninth and highest floor of the restaurant and took a seat in the only room on that floor.

Once they were seated and served tea, Jiu Chun asked them, "What would you like to eat tonight, esteemed guest?"

To Su Yang's surprise, Jiu Chun decided to ask him what he wanted to eat before asking Lian Li, which is a clear sign of disrespect to her status. However, Lian Li did not react to this and merely sipped her tea in silence.

"Give me the most popular dish," Su Yang casually said.

"I understand. We'll be right back with your food," Jiu Chun said before walking out the room, completely ignoring Lian Li.

"...Are you not going to eat?" he asked her with raised eyebrows. "I cannot consider this as having dinner with you if I am the only one eating."

"Don't worry, I have already told them what I wanted to eat when I made the reservation," she said to him in a calm voice.

Su Yang nodded his head at her words, but he couldn't stop getting this awkward and suspicious vibe in the atmosphere.

'What are you planning?' Su Yang calmly stared at Lian Li's beautiful face while he pondered in silence.

"What are you looking at? Stop staring at me with that vulgar gaze," Lian Li finally spoke a few minutes later.

"I cannot help it. Anyone would be staring if there's such a beautiful woman sitting in front of them," Su Yang chuckled.

"Hmph! Like I'd said before, you can keep your flattery to yourself, as it won't have any effect on me!" Lian Li coldly snorted.

"Well, if you do not want to hear praises, would you like to hear about swords? I might teach you a thing or two about Sword Will, you know." Su Yang asked her with a mysterious grin on his face.

"R-Really? You'll teach me about Sword Will?"

Even though she knew he was trying to bait her into a conversation, Lian Li couldn't help but immediately bite into his bait, as her sword-loving character longed to know more about Sword Will.

"Yes," he nodded before continuing, "It's not like Sword Will is a secret or anything like that. As long as you practice enough, I'm sure someone with your talent will be able to learn it in the near future."

Su Yang then proceeded to talk briefly about Sword Will and its foundations, which Lian Li listened to with perked ears and a serious expression, almost like a cat.

Time passed extremely quickly once Lian Li was engrossed in Su Yang's sword talks, and before they were aware, Jiu Chun had returned to the room with over a dozen dishes, each emitting strong spiritual energy.

"Thank you for your patience. Here is what we have prepared for you—"

Jiu Chun proceeded to explain every dish on the table to them.

A few minutes later, Jiu Chun bowed to them before leaving the room, "I hope you'll enjoy your meal, esteemed guest."

A subtle but sinister light flickered in Jiu Chun's eyes as he left the room.

'These people are definitely planning something... but what?' Su Yang acted as though he didn't notice and pondered silently.

Chapter 672 - Heavenly Gratification

"What are you waiting for? Let's hurry up and eat so we can end this farce..." Lian Li said to Su Yang after seeing that he hasn't moved after many moments, seemingly a little nervous and impatient.

"What's the rush? The food won't go anywhere, and I'd like to have your company for as long as possible. After all, you don't get to have dinner with someone of your stature often." Su Yang said with a calm expression on his face.

"..."

The nervousness in Lian Li's eyes became more apparent after she heard Su Yang's words.

'Did he notice our plan?! No! That's not possible!' Lian Li cried inwardly.

"Hmph! If you won't eat, then I'll eat and immediately leave afterward!" Lian Li said in an irritated voice before she began eating the food.

Su Yang shook his head and decided to eat a moment later.

However, the second his tongue touched the food, his eyebrows slightly trembled, and he immediately realized what was going on.

'This little girl really thinks she can poison me? Very well! I shall teach you a valuable lesson!' Su Yang sneered inwardly before chewing and swallowing the food without hesitation.

'He ate it! He really ate the food! Hahahaha! I have won, you damn pervert! I cannot wait to see you humiliate yourself!' Lian Li laughed inwardly after seeing his actions, barely able to resist laughing out loud for real.

'This subtle but bitter taste... I see what's going on. So that's what you were planning, huh? Unfortunately for you, you have picked the wrong person to poison!' Su Yang shook his head inwardly after swallowing the food.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After a few minutes of pure silence, when Lian Li could no longer hold her laughter, she burst out laughing, "Hahahaha! Seeing you eating so peacefully and ignorantly, I cannot help but laugh!"

"Huh? What's so funny about that?" Su Yang acted ignorantly and asked her with a puzzled expression on his handsome face.

However, Lian Li merely laughed even louder in response to his question.

A few seconds later, Su Yang pretended as though he'd finally come to a realization and exclaimed in a shocked voice, "D-Don't tell me you did something to the food?! Did you poison me?!"

"Hahaha! That's right! I did put something in your food!" Lian Li instantly admitted to her crimes.

"What did you put in my food?!" Su Yang stood up angrily.

"Have you ever heard of a flower called Heavenly Gratification?"

"Heavenly Gratification? What is that?" Su Yang frowned.

"It's a rare flower that produces these odorless powders that when consumed, it will make that person feel extreme pleasure, and they will be forced to ejaculate nonstop for many hours! It's the perfect medicine for a pervert like you!"

"What?! How dare you poison me with such a heinous poison!"

"Don't worry, the poison won't kill you. In fact, you'll probably even thank me in the end! Hahaha!" Lian Li laughed merrily.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After a moment of silence from Su Yang, to Lian Li's surprise, he suddenly sat down and continued eating the food as though nothing had happened.

"Eh?" Lian Li stared at him with wide eyes.

"W-Why are you still eating the food? Didn't you hear me? I said it's poisoned!" she asked him.

Su Yang then plucked a small piece from the food and rolled it until it resembled a pill, and he showed it to her while speaking in a calm voice, "Did you really think I didn't know about the poison? Although it has no odor, it has a distinct taste that I immediately recognized the second it touched my tongue."

Lian Li's eyes widened with shock upon hearing his words.

"T-Then why did you continue to eat it?! And why are you still eating it now?!" she asked him in a baffled voice.

"Why? Because the poison won't affect me," Su Yang casually replied.

"It won't affect you...? How is that possible?!"

"Because the poison will only work on those who are inexperienced with controlling their own body when it comes to their bodily fluids and whatnot."

"W-What does that even mean? You're not making any sense!" Lian Li said with a frown.

"In other words, I am a Dual Cultivator, and I have perfect control over my own body, so the poison won't affect me. Though, that is not to say the poison has no effect at all. I am simply controlling it."

"..."

Lian Li stared at him with wide eyes, seemingly in disbelief.

Dual Cultivator? He was a Dual Cultivator all along? How is that possible when he is clearly a swordmaster?

"I know what you're thinking, but I gave up the path of swords long ago to pursue my path of dual cultivation," he said to her in a calm voice.

"Impossible! How old are you even? How can you reach such a level with the sword and then have the time to become a Dual Cultivator?!" Lian Li asked him.

"This body is only eighteen years old, but I have lived far longer than 18 years," Su Yang responded.

"Huh? You are only 18 years old?" Lian Li was already shocked by the first part, much less the latter part.

"B-But what do you mean by 'living longer than 18 years' when you are only 18 years old? That doesn't make any sense!" Lian Li said after a moment of silence.

"I won't spoil the fun so I'll let you try to figure it out yourself." Su Yang shook his head.

"By the way, don't expect me to not punish you for trying to poison me even though it doesn't have any effect on me." Su Yang suddenly said.

"W-What are you going to do to me? In case you forgot, my father is—"

"I am going to do this..."

In the midst of her sentence, Su Yang flicked his fingers, shooting the food that he'd shaped into a pill a minute ago directly into Lian Li's mouth.

Gasp

It had happened so suddenly that Lian Li accidentally swallowed the food, and she silently stared at him with wide eyes filled with disbelief.

Chapter 673 - A Taste of Her Own Medicine

"Y-Y-You... Did you just..." Lian Li immediately stood up and staggered backward while pointing at Su Yang with her entire body trembling in fear.

"You should have a taste of your medicine before giving it to someone else just to make sure it works properly," Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"Y-You bastard! How dare you—" Lian Li instinctively pulled out her sword and pointed it at him, but after recalling how he defeated her and Wu Jiang the Sword Saint, she did not dare to actually attack him.

"Why are you angry? If you intend on poisoning somebody, you should also bring the antidote just in case something goes wrong, right?" Su Yang asked her with a nonchalant expression on his face.

"I-I don't have anything like that! There's no antidote for this kind of poison! And it's not even lethal!" Lian Li shouted at him.

"Oh, so you planned on poisoning me without sparing me with an antidote? Then you deserve it even more." Su Yang merely shook his head. "Well, look on the bright side, as you'd mentioned, this poison is not lethal, so there's no need to worry."

"Screw you! While you may be fine, I am not a Dual Cultivator!" Lian Li cried.

"You will start feeling the effects of the poison in a few minutes, what are you going to do?" Su Yang asked her.

"I am not going to be humiliated by you again! I'm leaving!" Lian Li prepared to fly out of the window, but Su Yang snapped his fingers, creating a formation around the room, preventing her from leaving.

"W-What are you doing?! Are you trying to keep me imprisoned here?! I swear I'll have your head for this!" Lian Li banged on the formation with a desperate look on her face.

"How can you leave before our dinner is finished? There is still so much food on the table. You promised me to have dinner tonight, and you're going to keep your words." Su Yang said with a calm expression on his face.

"Let me leave, please! I promise you that we'll have dinner on another date!" Lian Li said to him, feeling the urge to cry.

"How can I trust you now after knowing that you'd poisoned me?"

"I was wrong! I was wrong for poisoning you, okay?! I promise I won't bother you again, so let me leave before my body starts— Ah!"

Lian Li suddenly felt a weird sensation between her legs, causing her body to tremble and fall on her knees.

"Hm? The poison is affecting you already? I guess it has a stronger effect on inexperienced maidens like you." Su Yang looked at her with an amused expression on his face.

"T-T-This is not funny, Su Yang! I am really going to leak myself! Let me leave already!" Lian Li said to him with teary eyes while trying her hardest to resist the urge to piss herself.

"If you leave now, you'll only piss yourself in public. If you're going to do it, you might as well do it now when we are alone. I won't tell anyone, I promise." Su Yang said to her.

"F.u.c.k you— Ah!"

Lian Li suddenly collapsed on the floor, feeling a burning sensation spreading throughout her body, and it was especially hot in the area between her legs.

However, Su Yang remained calm even after seeing this, and he continued to eat his food with a nonchalant expression on his face.

"I-It's coming! Ahhhhh!"

Lian Li could no longer control her body after another minute of struggle and allowed the dam to flow.

A silver pond appeared under Lian Li a moment later.

"..."

"I-I-I swear to the heavens I am going to kill you—" Lian Li grabbed her sword once again and prepared to attack Su Yang.

However, before she could even take two steps, her body flared up once again, causing her body to feel extremely sensitive— to the point where even the slightest movement would cause her body to tingle with delight.

"Ahhh!"

Lian Li uncontrollably m.o.a.ned and collapsed on the floor once again. A few seconds later, her body spasmed, experiencing an orgasm for the first time in her life.

"Good luck trying to kill me while you are in that state," Su Yang said to her as he casually sipped on his teacup.

After swallowing the tea, he continued, "By the way, I have sealed off the sound coming from this room so you don't have to worry about others hearing your voice. You don't have to thank me."

Lian Li inwardly sighed in relief after hearing his words, feeling a lot less stressed.

"Ahhhh~!"

"Aaaaaah~!"

Lian Li continuously m.o.a.ned on the floor as her body was burning with desire, and the feeling only became stronger as time went on.

After many minutes of feeling like an animal in heat, Lian Li finally gave in to her lustful desires and began playing with herself by rubbing her little sister with her own hands.

"Mmmm~!"

"Aaaah~!"

Lian Li was so indulged in pleasuring herself that she forgot about Su Yang's presence and felt as though she was alone in this world at this moment.

Meanwhile, Su Yang continued to eat his dinner.

Half an hour later, once Su Yang cleaned every plate on the table, he stood up and walked to Lian Li, who was still pleasuring herself and nearly submerged in a pond of her own Yin Qi.

"It's hot... It's so hot..."

When Lian Li saw Su Yang's handsome face, she momentarily stopped pleasuring herself and grabbed his robes and spoke in a pleading voice, "Please... do something... to stop this... I am scared... if this continues... I will really go crazy... I can't deal with this for a few more hours!"

Seeing her pitiful expression and the tears in her eyes, Su Yang sighed, "I hope you've learned your lesson today, but alas, there is no antidote for this, but there is a method to make it go by faster."

"What is it? I will do anything! Please! Just help me!" she said.

Chapter 674 - Why Are You Stopping?

"Hmm... Since you are poisoned and technically not in the right state of mind, I don't want to make it seem like I am trying to take advantage of you, but there is only one way to make the poison leave your body faster— and that is to discharge it out of your body through pleasure," Su Yang said to her.

"H-How is that any different from what I am doing now?! Are you making fun of me?!" Lian Li shouted at him.

"Of course not. The powders from Heavenly Gratification is a unique poison that affects one's Yin or Yang Qi, and the only method to get rid of it is by discharging it through your Yin Qi," Su Yang said.

"Then how come it's not affecting you?! Why can't you just teach me whatever method you're using to control the poison?!" she cried as her hands continued to pleasure herself without even thinking, almost like an irresistible itch.

"What I am doing requires years of effort and natural experience and is not something you can learn in a day or two, much less a few minutes. If you don't want to listen to me, then I'll just leave you alone and let you squirm around for the next few hours. However, if someone enters this room before you're done..."

Lian Li's face immediately paled after hearing his words. She would rather die than to let someone else see her in such a humiliating manner!

"Okay! You win! I will listen to you! But how do I discharge my Yin Qi faster?!" She said to him a moment later.

"Although you might not be able to do it because you are inexperienced, I am a different story, as I am a Dual Cultivator. If you let me touch you, I can help you discharge your Yin Qi much faster than you can ever achieve by yourself."

"You want me to touch me?! I knew you had ulterior intentions, you damn pervert!" Lian Li exclaimed with a terrified look on her face.

If Su Yang were to force himself on her right now, she doubts that she would be able to refuse his advances, much less resist him.

"Relax, I won't touch you without your permission, and I definitely won't do anything more than helping you release your Yin Qi. I didn't mention this since there wasn't a need to but I am also a doctor and an Alchemist, so I know what I'm doing. And if you let me treat you, the poison will fully disappear within ten minutes."

"Aahh~!"

Lian Li suddenly moaned loudly, as the burning sensation in her body suddenly flared up again.

"I-I don't care anymore! Do whatever you want with my body! But if you go too far, I swear upon my family name that I will not forgive you!" Lian Li shouted at him before collapsing on the floor.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Then excuse me..."

Su Yang waved his sleeves, sending the empty plates on the table to a corner and cleaning the table while he was at it, before picking up Lian Li and placing her on the table.

"Ahhhh~!"

Lian Li's little sister gushed with Yin Qi just from being picked up by Su Yang.

Once she was on the table, Su Yang began roaming through her clothes with his hands without removing her clothes.

"Aaaaah!" Lian Li moaned loudly, feeling a heavenly sensation wherever Su Yang's hands touched.

"Even though it's already soaking wet, I'm going to take off your undergarment," Su Yang said to her as he removed the soaking wet underwear from her body, sliding it off her slim and long legs.

Once the stained cloth was removed, Su Yang was able to see the beautiful pink flower that was trembling between her legs.

Su Yang reached for the untainted flower, but he didn't immediately touch it and caressed the area around her slit.

"Aaaaaaahh~!"

Lian Li's body shook violently from the teasing, and her flower gushed with Yin Qi before squirting it everywhere.

Once her climax has passed, Su Yang slowly slipped two of his fingers into the entrance of her cave with ease and began massaging her insides.

"Ooooh~!"

Lian Li tightly held onto the table by its side and climaxed again shortly later, and the table began dripping with her Yin Qi.

"More... more... aaaaaah~!"

Lian Li was so indulged in the pleasure that she'd forgotten about the poison, and ten minutes passed by in a flash without her realizing it.

"Why... Why are you stopping?" Lian Li looked at him with a dazed expression on her face when he suddenly stopped touching her, not realizing that her body had healed.

"Because the poison is already out of your body. Or do you want me to keep going despite that?" Su Yang asked her.

"Y-Yes!"

A smile then appeared on his face, and he said in a calm voice, "Then you should go home to recover your state of mind first. I won't take advantage of someone in your condition. If you want me to continue, find me at Wu Jingjing's living quarters. I can promise you that it'll feel much better than what you'd experienced here— a hundred times more enjoyable."

"O-One hundred times...?" Lian Li stared at him with a dazed face and swallowed nervously, but she cannot imagine what that kind of pleasure might feel like.

After staring at him in silence for a few moments, Lian Li stood up and spoke with a cold expression on her face, "Remove the formation. I'm leaving."

Su Yang nodded and removed the formation. "What about this piece of cloth?" Su Yang asked her while pointing at the black triangular cloth sitting on the table.

Lian Li immediately ran to pick up her soaking wet underwear before flying out of the window, not daring to look at Su Yang's face, fearing that she might not want to leave afterward.

Once Lian Li disappeared from his sight, Su Yang's calm expression turned cold, and he mumbled in a low voice, "Now... How should I deal with this place?"

Chapter 675 - You Can't Do That to Me!

"It's been two hours since we served that young man the poisoned food— it's about time I check up on them as instructed by Her Highness..." Jiu Chun mumbled to himself as he made his way towards the ninth floor.

'Hmm? It's awfully silent up here...' Jiu Chun raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner, as he'd expected some sort of commotion. Furthermore, the closer he got to their room, the more anxious he felt for some reason, almost as though his instincts were telling him to stay away from that room.

"Your Highness, may I come inside?" Jiu Chun asked her from the outside.

However, there was no response even after waiting for many moments.

"Your Highness? It's Jiu Chun, and I have come here as instructed," he repeated.

After another moment of silence, a voice from inside the room resounded, yet it was clearly not Lian Li's voice, as it sounded like a young man's voice.

"You may come inside," Su Yang said to him from the inside.

"..."

Jiu Chun immediately frowned after hearing Su Yang's calm and nonchalant voice.

'Did something happen? Why does he sound so normal and tranquil despite consuming the poison?' Jiu Chun pondered to himself in silence, not daring to open the door and feeling an ominous feeling in his stomach.

"Did you not hear me? I said you can come inside," Su Yang's voice resounded again, this time sounding a little bit more annoyed.

"W-What happened to Her Highness?" Jiu Chun still didn't dare to enter without her permission and asked Su Yang.

"Don't worry about her— she's safe." Su Yang responded, making it sound as though he did something terrible to her.

"What?! Do you have any idea what you've done?! That was Emperor Lian's beloved daughter!" Jiu Chun exclaimed in a shocked voice.

However, Su Yang did not respond until a good moment later, "Why don't you come inside first? We'll talk as much as you want afterward."

"..."

Jiu Chun was speechless. As much as he wanted to turn around and run away, he didn't dare to abandon Lian Li, who could be in imminent danger right now, as that in itself would be a death sentence!

After swallowing nervously and taking a deep breath, Jiu Chun finally decided to open the door.

However, once he'd opened the door and saw the situation inside, he was greatly dumbfounded.

"W-Where's Her Highness?" Jiu Chun immediately asked him about Lian Li, ignoring the large puddle of liquid below the desk and the wet walls.

"Her? She went home after a satisfying dinner," Su Yang responded with a calm smile on his face.

"A satisfying dinner? Cut the bullshit! She wouldn't leave just like this!" Jiu Chun quickly exclaimed.

"Why not? Because you tried to poison me?" Su Yang suddenly narrowed his eyes at Jiu Chun, sending chills down his spine.

"Heh! So what if I poisoned you? It was Her Highness command, and I was simply following her orders!" Jiu Chun coldly sneered at him, not even bothering to hide his criminal act.

"So if she told you to kill yourself, would you do it?"

"I..." Jiu Chun opened his mouth only to close it without saying anything.

"So you are willing to take another's life but not your own? What a hypocrite you are..." Su Yang shook his head in a disapproving manner.

"Shut up! You won't die from consuming that kind of poison anyway! And how the hell are you perfectly fine?! Did you not eat the food?!"

"Oh, I ate the food alright, and it was quite amazing besides the fact that it was laced with poison."

"Then why are you not ejaculating everywhere like you are supposed to!" Jiu Chun pointed at him and said.

"I don't know, maybe there was something wrong with the poison? Why don't you try it for yourself?"

"Wha—?!"

Su Yang suddenly appeared in front of Jiu Chun and grabbed him by the neck before showing him a round-shaped ball that resembled a pill. However, if one could smell the rich aroma from the pill, they would immediately think it's actually food.

"T-That can't be!" Jiu Chun looked at the food that was pinched into a pill with a terrified expression. "D-Don't you dare! Who do you think I am?!"

Jiu Chun immediately released his Sovereign Spirit Realm cultivation base, but alas, Su Yang used his fingers to poke into his meridians, instantly sealing his cultivation.

"W-What did you just do to me?!" Jiu Chun cried out in horror after realizing that he could no longer muster his strength, feeling completely powerless in Su Yang's grasp.

"If I were you, I would be worrying about what I am about to do to you..."

"Stop it! I am the owner of the Nine Spring Halls! I have connections to nearly every major power in this world! If you touch me, you can forget about living in peace for the rest of your life!" Knowing that he cannot physically stop Su Yang, Jiu Chun began threatening him with his own status instead.

However, Su Yang acted as though he was deaf and flicked the food pill into Jiu Chun's mouth before using spiritual energy to force it down his throat.

"No! No! No!" Jiu Chun began panicking after feeling the pill enter his stomach.

"In a few minutes, you will start ejaculating uncontrollably, and I am going to drag you through every floor and every room in this building so your customers can watch. Even if you were following Lian Li's orders, since you dared to poison someone, you can't complain about being poisoned yourself!"

"What?! You can't do that to me!" Jiu Chun looked at Su Yang as though he was looking at the devil, but alas, as much as he wanted to run away, his entire cultivation base was sealed.

"I can't? Watch me!" Su Yang said, and he began dragging Jiu Chun downstairs by his neck, treating him as though he was a chicken prepared to be slaughtered!

Chapter 676 - Extreme Humiliation

"P-Please! I beg you! Don't do this to me! I will do anything you want!" Jiu Chun began begging Su Yang as he was being dragged away slowly, feeling as though he was being dragged to hell by the death god.

"The only thing I want from you is pure humiliation! Since you dared to try to humiliate me, I shall do the same to you! You should be thankful that I am going to let you keep your worthless life!" Su Yang spoke in a cold voice as he continued dragging Jiu Chun along with him.

And since they had a few minutes to spare before the poison took effect, Su Yang took his time going down the stairs, which only made Jiu Chun feel even more miserable.

Once they reached the eighth floor, Jiu Chun could feel the rod between his legs stiffen.

"Ahhhh! Stop! Stop it! Don't! Don't do this! You are not human!" Jiu Chun's desperate crying immediately alerted the guests inside the rooms on the eighth floor even before Su Yang opened the door.

A few moments later, Su Yang opened one of the doors and lifted Jiu Chun's body into the air before tearing the lower part of his clothes away, revealing his tiny dagger to the shocked guests.

The guests in the room covered their mouths from shock, but before they could even say a single word, Jiu Chun began ejaculating all over the place without being able to control it.

"Ahhhh!"

"Shit! What the f.u.c.k are you doing, Jiu Chun?!"

The guests were immediately enraged when Jiu Chun's Yang Qi splattered all over their food.

"T-This is not me! I am being forced to do this! I swear!" Jiu Chun cried with tears in his eyes.

After staying in the room for less than half a minute, Su Yang left the room to go to another room, repeating the same thing he just did to the other room, and he would continue this until he went to every single room on every single floor in the restaurant.

Once there were no longer any more rooms to disturb, Su Yang went outside and began walking around the street with Jiu Chun still ejaculating nonstop, leaving a trail of white substance wherever he walked.

"Heavens! Is that Jiu Chun, the owner of Nine Spring Hall?!"

"W-What the hell is happening?! What is he doing?!"

The pedestrians were shocked, even traumatized by the scene.

After spending an hour walking around the streets, Su Yang returned to the Nine Spring Hall, where every customer had left whilst the servants were all gathered outside, seemingly waiting for Jiu Chun's return.

By now, Jiu Chun had a blank expression on his face, seemingly dead inside.

Seeing this, Su Yang tossed Jiu Chun to the side of the street like trash.

A moment later, he retrieved his sword and faced the Nine Spring Hall.

"Regardless of the circumstances, a restaurant that dares to poison its customers... doesn't deserve to exist!" Su Yang's body suddenly emitted with powerful Sword Qi, and with a single swing from his sword, the entire nine-floor tall building was split in half.

"Ah... Ahhh...!"

Jiu Chun immediately began crying again when he saw this, and his voice was filled with deep sorrow, almost as though he had just witnessed his wife and sons being executed before him.

"Anyone who dares to try and humiliate me, Su Yang, in such a manner, will receive no mercy!" Su Yang said out loud before flying away, quickly disappearing into the night sky.

"S-Su Yang...?" Jiu Chun stared at Su Yang's disappearing figure with a dazed look on his face.

Wasn't Su Yang also the name of Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband?! Did he really just offend Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband?!

Jiu Chun's back was soaked in cold sweats at that thought, feeling even more terrified than before everything went down.

If he'd really offended Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband, losing his pride and dignity as a man is the last thing he should be worried about!

That night, news of what happened at the Nine Spring Hall and what Jiu Chun did was spread throughout the world like wildfire, reaching nearly every nook and cranny of the Holy Central Continent before the sun even rose.

Meanwhile, Wu Jingjing greeted Su Yang when he returned home.

"How was your dinner with Her Highness today?" she asked him.

"Chaotic and unexpected," he calmly responded.

"Oh? Care to tell me more about it? And how far do you think you've gotten with Her Highness tonight?"

"Well, you see..."

Su Yang proceeded to recall everything that had happened at the Nine Spring Hall to Wu Jingjing, who listened with wide eyes, which only grew larger as Su Yang went deeper into the story.

"I didn't think Her Highness would do such a thing to you! I'm glad nothing happened to you, Su Yang!" Wu Jingjing quickly went into his embrace, and their body fell onto the bed.

"And that Jiu Chun! Even if it was Her Highness's idea, he had the authority and means to refuse such a request! The fact he didn't refuse meant that he really didn't mind poisoning you just to curry some favor with Her Highness! He deserved everything that happened to him today!"

"And after hearing about what Her Highness did to you, I think it would be for the best if you stay away from her, as she clearly doesn't deserve someone like you!" Wu Jingjing in a slightly angry voice.

"Haha... Thank you for getting angry in my stead, Jingjing. As a reward, I'll pleasure you for the entire night. After all, even though I can control the poison, it's not as though it's completely out of my system, and I still have to discharge my Yang Qi sooner or later."

"Unfortunately, I don't think I'll be able to endure for the entire night," she sighed.

"Don't worry, I will do it at a pace where even you can endure for the entire night without sacrificing too much pleasure in doing so," he said to her.

"Really?" Wu Jingjing's eyes immediately began to flicker.

"Un." Su Yang nodded, and he said, "I'm ready when you are."

Chapter 677 - Well, Here I Am!

Early in the following morning, Lian Li was in her living quarter when she received news of what happened at the Nine Spring Hall last night after she left in a hurry.

"You may leave..." Lian Li said to the servant in a gloomy voice.

"Yes, Your Highness!"

Once the servant left the place, Lian Li fell onto her knees with a shocked expression on her face.

"What have I done? Because of my desire for revenge, I have not only humiliated myself but even Jiu Chun, even causing the destruction of his Nine Spring Hall! I should have never offended that man!" Lian Li deeply regretted poisoning Su Yang, but alas, there is no medicine for regret in this world.

"Once father learns of the truth— and he definitely will, I will be in even deeper trouble!" Lian Li sighed loudly.

"And what happened last night..."

Lian Li's mind suddenly drifted to when she was affected by the poison, and she recalled begging Su Yang for more.

"Ahhhhhh! Even though I was not in the right state of mind, I cannot believe that I would actually plead him to pleasure me!" Lian Li cried loudly.

However, no matter how much she tried to forget about yesterday, the burning sensation of pleasure from last night still lingered within her body, almost as if it didn't want to forget.

Then she recalled what she did last night after returning home— how she tried to pleasure herself only to be filled with frustration when she realized that it felt nothing like the feeling of Su Yang's fingers and that she will not be able to satisfy herself.

"T-This is all his fault that I can no longer pleasure myself without recalling what happened that night!"

After spending many minutes contemplating what she should do from this point, Lian Li decided to follow her heart's desires.

"Haaaa... If I don't satisfy this itch in my heart, I won't be able to cultivate properly anymore, and I might even go crazy." Lian Li sighed.

Sometime later, Lian Li left her living quarters and walked a few blocks before stopping in front of Wu Jingjing's living quarters.

Taking a deep breath and releasing it a moment later, Lian Li proceeded to the doorstep before knocking on the door.

Knock *Knock*

Lian Li could feel her heart beating louder with each knock.

"..."

"..."

"..."

However, nobody answered the door even after many minutes, so Lian Li decided to knock again but even louder this time.

Knock Knock*

"..."

"..."

"..."

"What the heck? Is there nobody home today?" Lian Li shook her head, feeling dispirited that all of her preparation had been in vain.

However, just as she turned around and prepared to leave, the door suddenly opened.

Lian Li turned around to see Su Yang standing at the door, but his appearance was slightly messy and wet, and his clothes were loosened, almost as if he'd just got out of the bathtub.

"What the hell? If you were home, answer the door when it's knocked on!" Lian Li said to him with a frown.

"I apologize for making you wait so long, but I was busy with a few things," he said with a smile.

"Busy?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows.

It was at this moment that Lian Li decided to look down, and to her surprise, there was a massive bulge between his legs.

"Y-Y-You—!" Lian Li took a few steps back from shock after realizing what Su Yang meant by 'busy', and her face flushed with redness.

"Why are you so surprised? Even though I could control the poison, I still had to discharge it from my body like you."

"Anyway, what are you doing here? If it's not important, can we do this later, since I have someone waiting for me right now," he said to her a moment later.

"I...I...I..." Lian Li's flash glowed even redder after hearing his words.

Seeing this, the smile on Su Yang's face grew wider, and he said, "If you don't mind waiting for a few more minutes, I'll attend you next."

Su Yang then went back inside the house. However, he didn't close the door and left the wide-open, seemingly signaling Lian Li to enter.

"..."

Lian Li stared at the open door with a dazed look as she pondered to herself whether she should really be doing this.

However, after standing for some time, a sharp and spine-chilling m.o.a.n echoed from inside the house and reached Lian Li's ears.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Upon hearing Wu Jingjing's passionate voice, Lian Li's body trembled, almost as though it was reacting to it.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaaaaaah!"

"Aaaaah~!"

Lian Li quickly began getting fidgety, and not wanting the others to hear such a vulgar noise, she closed the door but not before entering the house herself.

"Aaaa~!"

"Mmmm~!"

"Oooh~! That's the spot, Su Yang~!"

Wu Jingjing's voice penetrated the walls and straight into Lian Li's heart, causing her body to heat up from l.u.s.t.

'I can't believe I have to listen to this!' Lian Li cried inwardly.

After enduring the passionate m.o.a.ning coming from Wu Jingjing's room for a few minutes, the noises finally stopped.

"Are they finally done...?" Lian Li mumbled in a low voice, looking quite exhausted from trying to resist her urges to touch herself.

After waiting for a few more minutes, Su Yang appeared before her again.

"Thank you for waiting for me." Su Yang said to her with a handsome smile on her face.

"Now then, why don't you tell me why you are here?" he then asked.

"I..." Lian Li looked at him with a nervous and bashful expression, seemingly hesitant about speaking.

"What happened to your straight and daring character from when we first met? If you had the boldness to poison me during our dinner, surely, you should be able to tell me what you want—"

"I want a continuation of what happened yesterday!" Lian Li suddenly interrupted him in a loud voice, and she continued a moment later, "You told me to return once I am in the right state of mind, right?! Well, here I am!"

Chapter 678 - Proving Her Sincerity

"..."

Lian Li silently stared at Su Yang with a nervous frown on her beautiful face whilst her body was slightly shaking, as she could've never imagined that she would one day plead another man to pleasure her—one who she poisoned and hated not long ago.

Su Yang spoke after a moment of silence, "Follow me."

He then led Lian Li into another room before sitting down on the bed.

"I know I told you to find me, but why should I please someone who poisoned me? If it was a year ago, I wouldn't have even considered talking to you like this after what you did to me, much less cultivate with you. I guess I have gotten pretty easygoing after spending some time in this 'peaceful' world."

Hearing his words, Lian Li immediately dropped to her knees and kowtowed to someone who was not her father for the first time in her life, "I am really sorry for trying to poison you! I truly didn't mean any serious harm to you, as I only wanted to see you being humiliated after what happened to me! Do you have any idea how it feels when people are calling you vulgar nicknames behind your back such as 'Princess Piss Herself' or Silver River Princess?! I have never felt such humiliation since birth!"

"Hm..." Su Yang then said, "Since I am partially to blame for scaring you to the point of pissing yourself, if you're truly sorry for poisoning me, I'll give you a chance to prove your sincerity."

"Prove... my sincerity?" Lian Li lifted her head to see Su Yang's legs spread wide open and his intent clear.

Lian Li swallowed nervously, but since she'd already prepared herself for this before even coming here, she did not complain and crawled to him.

Once she was before his pelvic area, she loosened the lower part of his robes and gasped in shock at the profound dragon that was nearly poking her face.

'This is much larger than the bulge I saw before!' Lian Li cried inwardly.

"Never judge a book by its cover," Su Yang said with a smile on his face after seeing her dazed expression.

Lian Li swallowed nervously when she smelled the enchanting scent that was coming from his sword, and a single sniff of this scent instantly caused her little sister to tremble with excitement.

"Even though you have no experience, you should know what to do, right?" Su Yang asked her.

"I-I do! I may have no experience, but don't treat me like I am a child!" Lian Li said before she grabbed his thick sword with her hands, wrapping her slim fingers around the stiff meatstick and feeling its hot temperature.

'Even my sword's handle is not this thick...' Lian Li compared Su Yang's meatstick with her sword as she began stroking it softly and slowly, feeling fascinated by it.

However, after many minutes of stroking, Su Yang suddenly said in a disappointed voice, "Is that all you can do? I am already getting bored."

"W-What else am I supposed to do?!" Lian Li said to him with a frown.

"I don't want to treat you like a child, so figure it out on yourself." Su Yang shook his head at her.

"..."

Lian Li was speechless. How else is she supposed to please him without her hands?

After a moment of pondering, Lian Li finally realized the meaning behind his words, and she exclaimed, "Y-You want me to use my mouth?! That's dirty!"

Hearing her words, Su Yang quickly frowned and said to her, "How dare you call it dirty? If you don't want to do it, then we can forget about this altogether."

"..."

Lian Li bit her lips after hearing his words, and she began moving her head towards the sword before licking it with her soft tongue a moment later.

'What a strong smell! It's making me go crazy!' Lian Li thought to herself as a pleasant-smelling odor penetrated her nose, feeling slightly lightheaded after taking a few sniffs.

Her body was also getting hotter, and the tingling sensation between her legs was getting stronger.

'This smell... this taste... I cannot get enough of it!'

Once licking it could no longer satisfy her l.u.s.t, Lian Li opened her mouth wide and swallowed Su Yang's meatstick whole.

Slurp *Slurp*

Sucking and slurping noises quickly filled the room as Lian Li gave Su Yang a passionate fellatio, and even though her techniques were not the best, the feeling of her small mouth and her intense movements made up for it.

Lian Li increased her intensity as she got more comfortable sucking on Su Yang's rod, and she even started using her throat to please him sometime later.

"Since you are putting so much effort into this, I shall reward you with my precious Yang Qi." Su Yang suddenly said to Lian Li, but she was too engrossed in the fellatio to hear his words.

A moment later, a load of steaming hot Yang Qi gushed from Su Yang's hot rod and flowed directly into Lian Li's throat, nearly choking her from surprise.

"Ah!"

Lian Li quickly stopped the fellatio and began coughing, but Yang Qi continued to ejaculate from Su Yang's body, shooting and sticking it all over Lian Li's face.

"What is that?! It's all over my face, and I even swallowed some!" she looked at him with teary eyes afterward.

"You don't even know what Yang Qi is? It's what men use to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e women." Su Yang said to her.

"I-I.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e?! D-Don't tell me I am going to be pregnant because I swallowed it?!" she looked at him with wide eyes filled with shock.

"What? That's not how it works, you innocent princess." Su Yang shook his head at her. "Unless it enters your uterus through the hole between your legs and fertilizes your eggs, you won't get i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed, and my Yang Qi is special, so unless I allow it, you won't get pregnant even if I do fill your hole with it."

"S-So I won't get pregnant?" Lian Li sighed in relief after hearing his explanation.

Chapter 679 Legs in the Air

"Now that you know, are you still going to waste it? My Yang Qi is extremely precious and healthy for one's body and cultivation. Do you know how many women used to crave for my Yang Qi?" Su Yang said to Lian Li.

When he was still active as a Dual Cultivator in the Divine Heavens, beauties from across the universe would seek him just so they could receive his Yang Qi, as it would provide a significant boost to their cultivation base.

Lian Li looked at the white substances that were sticking to her body with a dazed face for a good moment before she wiped it with her fingers and put it into her mouth.

And since she got to actually taste his Yang Qi this time, Lian Li was pleasantly surprised by the sweet taste that aroused her taste buds.

"Mm..."

Lian Li licked her fingers in an erotic manner for the next few minutes as she slowly cleaned the Yang Qi on her body.

Once she was done, Su Yang stood up and said to her, "Take off your clothes and lay on the bed."

Lian Li immediately nodded with eagerness and removed her clothes before laying on the bed with her arms crossed across her breasts and with a bashful expression on her face.

Seeing this, Su Yang grabbed Lian Li by her ankles and lifted her legs high into the air while spreading them wide simultaneously.

"W-What kind of position is this?!" Lian Li cried out loud after seeing this embarrassing position that revealed everything to him, feeling even more naked despite already being completely naked.

However, Su Yang did not say anything and even pushed her legs further into the air— until her body was at an angle and her butt was sticking towards the ceiling.

Su Yang then kneeled on the bed and approached the wet slit that was slightly spread with his head, before giving it a passionate kiss.

"Aaaaaah~!" Lian Li moaned in a delightful voice.

Hearing her beautiful-sounding voice, Su Yang used his tongue to tease the pink pearl that was swelled up from the sensation of pleasure.

"Aaaaaahh~!"

"Aaaah~!"

"Mmmh~!"

Lian Li quickly forgot about her embarrassing position and indulged herself in the pleasure, even spreading her legs wider for him.

"I'm cumming! It's coming out!" Lian Li exclaimed, and her body gushed with Yin Qi a moment later, showering Su Yang and herself with it.

Once Lian Li had her first climax, Su Yang stood up on the bed positioned himself right above Lian Li.

He then placed Lian Li's slender and smooth legs onto his shoulder, before placing his hands near her head, looking like he was trying to do push-ups.

"Can you see it?" Su Yang suddenly asked her.

Lian Li looked at her wet flower and Su Yang's massive sword that was directly above her hole in a very clear view.

"Very clearly..." she mumbled in a bashful voice.

"Good— then watch carefully as I pierce your seal for the first time in your life..."

Su Yang said as he pressed the tip of his sword against her soaking wet slit and pushed it into her body slightly.

"Aaaaah!" Lian Li released a painful cry as her entrance was stretched to a degree which it has never experienced before, and she could see blood flowing from her hole a moment later.

'I-I didn't think it would be this painful!' she cried inwardly, feeling intense pain as Su Yang's sword pierced deeper into her hole, tearing her inner walls apart.

"Don't worry, it is only painful at first." Su Yang said to her.

"Un..." she nodded her head.

"Agh...!"

Lian Li tightly clenched her jaw from the pain, yet there was this oddly satisfying feeling from it.

Once Su Yang's entire sword was inside Lian Li's body, he began pulling his shaft from her hole until only his tip was left inside, and that's when he propelled his body forward, shoving his thick rod into her body again.

"Aaaaah~!"

Lian Li moaned loudly. Even though it was still painful, a clear sensation of pleasure could also be felt shortly afterward.

"Mmm~!"

"Aah~!"

"Oooohhhh...!"

Lian Li stared at Su Yang in his eyes with an enchanted gaze, and she would look at her own hole being pounded by his shaft every so often.

After a few minutes of casual thrusting, Lian Li could no longer feel anything that was not pleasure, and her entire body was burning with passion and desire.

However, when Su Yang suddenly stopped moving, Lian Li looked at him with a puzzled look on her face.

"What happened? Why did you stop?" She asked him.

He smiled and said, "To give you some time to prepare yourself mentally."

"Huh?" Lian Li's eyes widened at his words. What did he mean by that?

"I promised you that I would make you feel a hundred times more blissful than last night, right? Well, I am going to fulfill that promise now."

After saying those words, Su Yang began moving his hips again, but his movements were much fiercer and intense than before.

"Aaaah!"

Lian Li could feel her lower body suddenly flare up with passion, almost like it was on fire.

"It's hot! It feels so hot!"

Lian Li's body trembled uncontrollably, and more Yin Qi gushed from her body.

Pap! *Pap*! *Pap*!

The entire bed shook as Su Yang pounded Lian Li's body. However, Su Yang was not done with Lian Li, as he suddenly pinched her nipples with his fingers, even pulling them slightly.

"Aaaaaah~! I am going to go crazy!" Lian Li exclaimed as her eyes were rolled back from the intense pleasure that electrocuted her entire body, feeling as though there were tiny electric snakes traveling all over and within her body.

Many minutes of intense cultivation later, Su Yang said to her, "I'm going to release my Yang Qi again."

"G-Go ahead!" Lian Li nodded her head without thinking.

After a few more thrusts, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Lian Li's body, filling her hole and uterus with his hot Yang Qi.

"Aaaaaah~!" Lian Li also released a long cry of satisfaction.

'I-I really won't get pregnant from this, right...?' Lian Li thought to herself afterward as she watched her hole overflow with Yang Qi.

Chapter 680 Nearly Climaxing Every Minute

After Su Yang removed his sword from her body, Lian Li looked at her loosened hole that was flowing with Yang Qi with a dazed face.

'My body is no longer pure, and I was defiled by the man who I tried to poison last night for humiliating me in public...' Lian Li tried to comprehend the unbelievable events that have occurred within the past two days.

After pondering for a while, Lian Li turned to look at Su Yang, who immediately sat in the lotus position with his eyes closed after their cultivation session, seemingly trying to cultivate.

'How can he be so calm? You just took Emperor Lian's daughter's virginity, you know!? Any normal individual should be jumping in joy right now!' Lian Li cried inwardly, feeling as though her pride and status had been disregarded.

But alas, little did she know that Su Yang has slept with many women who were real 'Goddesses' and 'Empresses', much less a mere princess in some small world, and one's status didn't matter to him, as he only saw them as cultivation partners.

An hour or two later, Su Yang opened his eyes, which flickered with a profound light, causing his aura to skyrocket.

'He had a breakthrough?' Lian Li, who was resting on the bed raised her eyebrows after witnessing his cultivation breakthrough.

Su Yang took a deep breath before turning to look at Lian Li with a handsome smile on his face, "Thank you for helping me reach the eighth level Heavenly Spirit Realm. Your Pure Yin Essence helped me a lot, and I am already close to reaching the ninth level even though I just had a breakthrough."

"..."

Lian Li was speechless. Since when did breakthroughs become so easy— to the point where one can increase an entire level after having sex once? Were Dual Cultivators always this powerful?

Su Yang then continued to speak, "And since I am full of energy after the breakthrough, we can continue to cultivate for a few more sessions— that is if you want to."

"I...I want to continue!" Lian Li quickly nodded her head. There was simply no way she could refuse such an enticing offer after what she experienced.

"Then let's see what you can do by yourself first."

Su Yang laid on the bed with his sword pointing towards the ceiling.

"Go ahead. Use it as you please," he said to her with a smile.

"As I please...?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows. How is she supposed to use it?

After pondering for a moment, she walked to stand above Su Yang's body before sitting on his sword.

Once the sword was inside her body, Lian Li began riding his rod slowly, increasing her speed and intensity once she was feeling more comfortable.

"Mmm..."

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaaahn..."

"Ooooh~!"

After Lian Li rode Su Yang for many minutes without any breaks, Su Yang suddenly grabbed her by the waist and began assisting her with her hip movements.

"Aaahh!"

"Ahhhhhh~!"

"Aaaahn~!"

Lian Li's body trembled with delight as Su Yang also began thrusting his hips into the air whilst pulling her body down at the same time, creating a strong clapping sound each time their bodies connected.

And for the next hour, they would continue in this position. By the time the hour was over, Lian Li was sweating all over her body, causing it to glisten like the sea during a sunny day, and she'd climaxed over fifty times during this intense marathon— experiencing nearly one climax every minute.

"No more! no more! I can't take this anymore!" Lian Li cried out loud.

"Then we'll end it with this!" Su Yang increased his speed significantly for a few seconds before releasing his Yang Qi into her.

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaahhhhhh~!!!"

Lian Li also released a long and extended moan, feeling her already fully stomach expanding from the excess amount of Yang Qi flowing into her body.

Once the Yang Qi stopped coming, Lian Li collapsed onto Su Yang's chest while panting for air, feeling completely drained.

Su Yang did not move and allowed Lian Li to lay on his warm chest until she was ready to move again.

However, Lian Li did not move even an hour later and remained unmoving like a stone statue, yet she was not asleep or unconscious.

"Hey..." she suddenly mumbled to him a few minutes later.

"What is it?"

"Do you think we can do this again in the future?" she asked him with a rosy face.

"..."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke in a calm voice, "I cannot make any promises."

"Why not? Is it because of what happened yesterday? If you don't like me, then I am willing to change! I will become someone you can like!" Lian Li lifted herself slightly to look at him with a saddened expression on her face, looking like a puppy who just got disowned.

"No, it has nothing to do with your little prank nor does it have anything to do with your character. I have slept with women who really tried to kill me before, and I have slept with women who are clearly crazy, so your little prank and princess attitude are not even worth mentioning." Su Yang said to her.

"Then why? Why can't we do this again? If I have to be your woman, then I..."

Su Yang pressed one of his fingers against her soft lips before interrupting her, "You're Emperor Lian's daughter, right? Since I will be visiting him soon, we continue talking about this once you learn a little bit more about me."

"You're going to be visiting my father?" Lian Li looked at him with a surprised face.

"Yes, I have something I want from him," he nodded. "And if you're serious about becoming my woman, we should probably also let your father know about it, right?"

"..."

After a moment of silence, Lian Li said, "Okay, I understand. When you meet with my father, I want to go with you."

Chapter 681 How About Another Child?

After his cultivation session with Lian Li ended, Su Yang left her in the room to rest.

"Oh? Where did you go?" Wu Jingjing, who had just gotten out of the bath, asked him, completely unaware that Lian Li had come to their house, as she had been unconscious until just very recently and Su Yang didn't mention anything to her.

"Cultivating," Su Yang responded with a smile on his face.

"Hm? You had a breakthrough? Congratulations!" Wu Jingjing noticed that he'd entered the 8th level Heavenly Spirit Realm.

He nodded, and then he continued, "By the way, regarding our little bet, we never decided on what the winner receives."

"Oh, right. You have until the end of today to conquer Her Highness." Wu Jingjing recalled their little bet, and she said, "Are you sure you want to do it? Even though she tried to poison you— or rather, she did..."

Su Yang smiled and said, "I have slept with women who have done far worse to me, a little non-lethal poison isn't going to stop me from cultivating with them. Though, that is not to say I don't have a line. It's just that I am slightly more tolerant when it comes to beauties."

"Is that so..."

Wu Jingjing looked at him with a dumbfounded gaze before speaking in a bashful voice, "Anyway, I don't know about the rewards, since I already belong to you, and I am willing to do anything for you even without the bet."

Hearing her words, Su Yang showed a mysterious smile on his face.

"How about another child?" he said in a calm voice.

"Eh?" Wu Jingjing stared at him with wide eyes filled with shock. Did she hear him properly?

"Hahaha!" Su Yang suddenly burst out laughing after seeing her reaction, and he said afterward, "I'm just joking with you. You are right. There's no need for any rewards."

"Anyway, I am going to take a bath." Su Yang said as he walked away without turning around.

"..." Wu Jingjing continued standing there with a dazed look on her face, seemingly in deep thoughts.

A few moments later, Wu Jingjing was snapped out of her daze when Wu Min began crying in the other room.

Wu Jingjing then went to pick up Wu Min and changed her diapers before feeding her breast milk in the living room.

Sometime later, as Wu Jingjing was feeding Wu Min, one of the doors opened, causing Wu Jingjing to turn her head.

"Huh?" Wu Jingjing's eyes widened with shock when she saw Lian Li walk out from one of the guest rooms while looking slightly drunk.

"Y-Your Highness...?" Wu Jingjing instinctively called out to her in a stupified voice.

"Wu Jingjing...?" Lian Li looked at Wu Jingjing without any reaction since she already knew about Wu Jingjing's presence.

Wu Jingjing, on the other hand, was confused as to why Lian Li was inside her home and even one of her guest rooms. However, right as she opened her mouth to ask Lian Li, she noticed Lian Li's messy and sweaty appearance, looking like she'd just finished some intense physical training.

"You... You... D-Did you cultivate with Su Yang?" Wu Jingjing decided to ask her for confirmation.

"Yes, I did." Lian Li responded without hesitation.

Wu Jingjing's jaw dropped after hearing Lian Li's simple but shocking answer. Su Yang actually managed to conquer the Lian Family's princess within two days since their first meeting, not even mentioning the things that have happened between them! How does he do it? His talents in seducing women are comparable to his sword skills if not even stronger!

After a moment of silence, Lian Li walked to sit near Wu Jingjing before speaking, "Wu Jingjing, if you don't mind me asking, why did you decide to bear his child?"

"Uhh..."

After pondering for a moment, Wu Jingjing spoke, "Initially, I only wanted a talented child at first, and with Su Yang's sword talents, he was more than qualified to be the father. However, after I cultivated with him, I started to want more than just his child— I wanted him, too. And this feeling would only grow stronger after I gave birth to Wu Min."

"Is that so..." Lian Li mumbled in a low voice.

"Hm? So you two finally met, huh?" Su Yang suddenly appeared with a refreshed appearance and a handsome smile on his face.

"You! Why didn't you tell me about Her Highness just now?" Wu Jingjing immediately complained to him.

"Because I thought it would be more fun if you found out yourself," he quickly responded.

"Unbelievable..." Wu Jingjing shook her head at him.

"Anyway, I should head back to the Four Seasons Academy now to prepare for our meeting with Emperor Lian," Su Yang said to her. "Do you want to come with me, or do you want to stay here for now?"

"Since Emperor Lian only agreed to meet with you and the Xie Family, I will stay here for now." Wu Jingjing said to him. "And I would like Wu Min to spend some more time with my father before we leave for good."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Okay, I will return to pick you two up when we are ready to leave."

Lian Li raised her eyebrows after listening to their conversation, as it sounded like they were going somewhere far away.

Su Yang then turned to look at Lian Li.

"You are coming right?" he asked her.

"Y-Yes..." she quickly nodded.

Su Yang and Lian Li left the house shortly later, but before Su Yang walked out of the door, Wu Jingjing suddenly grabbed his hand and pulled him towards her.

After a passionate kiss on his lips, Wu Jingjing mumbled to him in a spine-tingling voice, "If you really want another child, I will gladly bear as many as you want, Su Yang..."

Su Yang looked at her with a dazed face for a moment before speaking with a bright smile on his handsome face, "I won't be humble then."

Chapter 682 Conquering Holy Central Continent's Top 3 Beauties

After leaving Wu Jingjing's house and the Holy Sword Academy, Su Yang returned to the Four Seasons Academy with Lian Li on his flying boat.

Once they returned to the Sect, Su Yang went straight to Zhu Mengyi's living quarters and knocked on the door.

"Su Yang! Welcome back—" Zhu Mengyi opened the door to greet Su Yang with Zhu Jiayi in her arms, but her words were cut short when she noticed the peerless beauty standing beside him.

"Y-Y-Your Highness?!" Zhu Mengyi cried out loud, nearly dropping Zhu Jiayi from shock. "What are you doing here?! And with Su Yang?!"

"Let's talk inside," Su Yang said to her with a calm smile on his face.

"O-Okay..." Zhu Mengyi nodded.

Sometime later, the three of them sat down in the living room.

"W-Would you like some tea, Your Highness...?" Zhu Mengyi asked her in a nervous tone, as she wasn't prepared for Lian Li's presence.

"There's no need to be so humble, Mengyi. After all, you're both my woman," Su Yang said to her.

"E-Excuse me...?" Zhu Mengyi looked at him and then Lian Li with her eyes as wide as saucers.

"Wait a second, you're also his partner?" Lian Li was also surprised to hear this. Then she looked at the beautiful little girl in Zhu Mengyi's embrace and continued, "D-Don't tell me that's also..."

"That's right. She's also my daughter." Su Yang spoke in a prideful voice.

"Unbelievable... Not only did you manage to impregnate Master Wu's daughter but you also impregnated Senior Zhu's daughter, Zhu Mengyi? How many more women out there had been impregnated by you?" Lian Li looked at him with a look of disbelief. How did a single man conquer the top 3 beauties in the Holy Central Continent by himself? Calling it a miracle would be an understatement!

"As expected of you, Su Yang... Even the princess cannot resist your charms..." Zhu Mengyi said as she looked at him with admiration.

"..."

Lian Li narrowed her eyes at Zhu Mengyi, but there was nothing she could say, as it was true that both her heart and body had been conquered by Su Yang.

"Oh, right. Su Yang, I have a favor to ask of you. I tried speaking to my mother, but she's not happy about me leaving with Zhu Jiayi, and I didn't dare to tell her your real background without your permission so can you speak with her for me?" Zhu Mengyi suddenly said to him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Okay, I can speak with her before I speak with the Xie Family."

"I will be back," Su Yang then left the building, leaving Zhu Mengyi and Lian Li alone.

"..."

"..."

"..."

After a long moment of awkward silence, Lian Li suddenly spoke, "Can you tell me about your relationship with Su Yang?"

Zhu Mengyi nodded, and she proceeded to give Lian Li a brief explanation of her meeting with Su Yang and how they ended up giving birth to Zhu Jiayi.

"I see..." Lian Li mumbled after listening to Zhu Mengyi's story, and she asked a moment later, "Then can you tell me about Su Yang's real background?"

"That's..." Zhu Mengyi immediately hesitated. Even though Lian Li was the princess and also Su Yang's woman, she didn't dare to reveal his real background.

"With all due respect, Your Highness, I cannot tell you about his background. And I think it would be better if you asked Su Yang since it would mean a lot more if you heard it from him. I'm also confident that he wouldn't say no."

"..."

Lian Li turned silent. Just what kind of background does Su Yang have that even Zhu Mengyi wouldn't dare to reveal?

"I understand. I'm sorry if I'd put you in an awkward spot just now." Lian Li said to her a moment later.

'Huh? Is it just me or does Her Highness feel a little different than before? It's almost like she's less overbearing and hard to approach...' Zhu Mengyi wondered inwardly.

Meanwhile, Su Yang just reached Sect Master Zhu's room.

"Su Yang, huh. I'm guessing Zhu Mengyi asked you to speak with me," she sighed after seeing him.

"That's right. You want to know where she'll be going, right?" Su Yang said.

"No, I wanted her to tell me the truth, as it was clear that she was hiding something from me."

"Then allow me to tell you in her stead, as this is related to me in the first place."

Su Yang took a deep but calm breath before continuing, "As you know, I am from the Eastern Continent. However, that is not entirely true, as I came from another place before arriving at the Eastern Continent."

"What do you mean by that?" Sect Master Zhu raised her eyebrows.

"What I am trying to say is— I am actually a Cultivator who came from another world that exists somewhere within the starry sky, and the reason why Zhu Mengyi might not be able to visit you in the future is because it might be impossible to return to this world once we leave."

"You... what?!"

Sect Master Zhu immediately stood up with a shocked face.

"That's right. There exist other worlds in this endless universe. If you want a simpler term, then one can say that I have come from a 'higher realm'."

Su Yang then continued, "Sit down and I'll tell you more about it."

Sect Master Zhu nodded in a dazed manner before sitting down in a falling motion.

Seeing this, Su Yang chuckled, and he began telling her about the existence of the Four Divine Heavens and even Immortal Fairy Su Yue's real identity and their real relationship.

Many minutes later.

"Good heavens! No wonder why Immortal Fairy Su Yue is so powerful! It turns out that she actually came from another world where the Cultivation world is much more advanced than this place! It all makes sense now!" Sect Master Zhu exclaimed, feeling chills all over her body after learning about the Divine Heavens.

Chapter 683 Sect Master Zhu's Decision

After taking some time to digest the information, Sect Master Zhu looked at Su Yang with a serious expression, and she asked him, "You... You plan on taking Zhu Mengyi and Zhu Jiayi to the Divine Heavens, right?"

"That's right," he nodded.

"A world that's thousands of times larger than this world... that also means that it's thousands of times more dangerous, right?"

"That's right." Su Yang said, not sugarcoating his words.

"Will you be able to protect them?" Sect Master Zhu continued in a clear voice.

"I will tell you exactly what I told Wu Jiang— I will protect them even at the cost of my life."

"Wu Jiang? That old fart? What did he say?"

"Just like you, he was unwilling to let her go at first, but he eventually decided to give up and let her leave with me."

"I see..." Sect Master Zhu closed her eyes and rubbed them for a good moment before speaking, "If that old fart could let his daughter go..."

"Haaa..." After a long sigh, she continued, "You can tell that girl that she can do whatever she wants— I will no longer interfere with her decisions. In fact, she became an independent woman when she gave birth to Zhu Jiayi, and I have no right to keep her here for my own selfishness."

Su Yang nodded, and then he said, "Since I am taking away Zhu Mengyi and Zhu Jiayi from you, it's only fair that I give you something in return."

After a moment of silence, he continued: "The Soul Divination Pill. I'll teach you how to concoct it."

"REALLY?!" Sect Master Zhu immediately stood up and shouted after hearing his words, her eyes wide from excitement.

"Yes. Get the ingredients for me, and I'll concoct it right in front of you. If you want, you can even let others watch." Su Yang said. "Try to gather the ingredients before I leave to meet Emperor Lian. I am going to speak with the Xie Family in the meantime. Once the preparations are complete, find me at Mengyi's living quarters."

"Right away!" Sect Master Zhu did not even wait for Su Yang to leave before rushing outside to prepare for the pill.

Su Yang left the place after her and went to the Xie Family's living quarters.

"Welcome back, Su Yang." Xie Xingfang greeted him at the door. "Are we leaving now?"

"No, I am just here to let you know that I have returned. We'll leave tomorrow morning, so be prepared by then."

"I'll let them know." Xie Xingfang nodded.

Su Yang returned to Mengyi's living quarters shortly later, and to his surprise, Lian Li and Zhu Mengyi were sitting beside each other on the couch, and Zhu Jiayi was sitting on Lian Li's lap.

"S-Su Yang?!" Lian Li immediately panicked after seeing his face, feeling embarrassed to be seen in this situation for some reason.

"Hoh. You didn't seem like the type to like children. What a surprise." Su Yang said with a teasing smile on his face after seeing her reaction.

"I...I..." Lian Li was speechless.

"Hahaha... Don't worry, I find women who can handle children quite charming."

"Really?" Zhu Mengyi looked at him with bright eyes.

"Why would I lie?" Su Yang said as he sat down beside them.

"Ahh! Aaah! Aaaaah!"

Zhu Jiayi suddenly began making noises while looking at Su Yang, even opening her arms wide for him.

"Hm? You want me to hold you?"

"H-Here you go..." Lian Li quickly passed Zhu Jiayi to Su Yang.

Once Zhu Jiayi was sitting on Su Yang's lap, she immediately stopped making noises.

"I don't know how, but I think she can somehow tell that you're her father..." Zhu Mengyi spoke with amazement written all over her face.

"Then she must be a genius," he chuckled.

"Of course. She's your daughter, after all." Zhu Mengyi said with a smile.

"..." Lian Li watched in silence as Su Yang played with Zhu Jiayi, and after watching them for many minutes, somewhere in her heart grew the desire to have children of her own.

Meanwhile, Sect Master Zhu just finished the preparations for the Soul Divination Pill and went to fetch Su Yang at Zhu Mengyi's living quarters.

"Su Yang! I have finished the preparations! You can conduct the pill whenever you are ready!" Sect Master Zhu shouted from outside of the house before anyone could even open the door, as she was simply that impatient to see the Soul Divination Pill being concocted properly.

The door opened a few moments later, but the person Sect Master Zhu was expecting to see did not appear, and to her surprise, someone else who she did not expect even in a million years greeted her at the door.

"Senior Zhu." Lian Li opened the door and greeted her.

"Y-Y-Y-Your Highness?!?!?" Sect Master Zhu took a few steps back from shock and rubbed her eyes afterward, not daring to believe her eyes.

"W-W-What are you doing here?"

"Due to some circumstances, I am going to see my father with Su Yang," she said.

"Su Yang?" Sect Master Zhu swallowed nervously, as she cannot comprehend this bizarre situation.

"Are the preparations ready?" Su Yang appeared a moment later in a casual manner and asked her while Zhu Jiayi was still in his arms.

"Y-Yes..." Sect Master Zhu quickly nodded.

"What's happening? What is prepared?" Zhu Mengyi also appeared to ask with a curious look on her face.

"I am going to concoct the Soul Divination Pill for her," Su Yang said.

"The Soul Divination Pill!" Zhu Mengyi expressed surprise before asking with pure excitement in her voice, "Can I also watch?!"

"Of course."

Su Yang then looked at Lian Li and asked her, "Do you also want to come?"

"Yes," she quickly nodded.

The Soul Divination Pill is a mysterious pill that the Four Seasons Academy has been researching for many generations with her Lian Family's help, but they have not been able to replicate the pill successfully despite having the full recipe for the pill. If Su Yang can really concoct the pill, it will surely be a historical event for them.

Chapter 684 Is There Anything He Cannot Do?

After leaving Zhu Mengyi's living quarters, Sect Master Zhu brought Su Yang and the others to a mountain somewhere behind the Four Seasons Academy.

Once they reached the peak of this mountain, Su Yang could see a dozen elderlies wearing the Four Seasons Academy uniform, and they were standing around this luxurious pill cauldron.

"These are all the top Alchemists and sect elders I trust in the sect, and they'll be watching the process if you don't mind." Sect Master Zhu said to Su Yang after they arrived.

"I wouldn't mind even if you brought every disciple here," Su Yang said.

She nodded, and then she proceeded to introduce Su Yang to the sect elders: "This is Su Yang, and although he may have a very young appearance, don't let his appearance fool you, as his Alchemy skills are beyond what everyone here is capable of. Even if we all combined our talents and skills, we still won't be able to match him. Furthermore, he is also the one who gave us the full recipe for the Soul Divination Pill."

"Thank you for allowing us to witness history being made, Senior Su."

"Words cannot express my gratitude, Senior Su."

"Even though I have never seen it myself, I have heard great things about your alchemy skills, and I feel honored to be here today, Senior Su."

The sect elders all greeted him with sincere respect, as Sect Master Zhu had warned them about Su Yang's unfathomable background that surpasses even the Lian Family without telling them everything about him.

After greeting Su Yang, the sect elders bowed to Lian Li. Although her presence was definitely unexpected, they didn't think too much about it.

'Su Yang... he was the one who gave them the full recipe? Just who are you, really?' Lian Li wondered to herself.

"Here are all of the ingredients. We triple checked it so there shouldn't be any missing." Sect Master Zhu said to him as she pointed at the neatly organized ingredients piled beside each other by the pill cauldron.

Su Yang did not even look at the ingredients and merely took a deep breath before nodding his head, "Yes, all of the ingredients are here."

"..."

The alchemists were astonished by Su Yang's godlike sense of smell. Not even a dog would be able to do what he just did!

A few moments later, Su Yang stood in front of the pill cauldron.

After taking a deep breath, he waved his sleeves, causing the ingredients to all float in the air. However, he didn't immediately toss all of the ingredients into the pill cauldron as he normally would.

"Since this is a demonstration and I am trying to teach you how to concoct this pill, I will do this one step at a time and in a method that can be replicated— including the speed at which I concoct the pill at. However, I am only going to do this once, since this will take many hours, so if you miss it..." Su Yang said to them.

The sect elders nodded with a serious expression on their faces, feeling like they are back in their prime days when they were still trying to learn the basics of alchemy.

"For the first ingredient, I am going to put..."

Su Yang started the process a few moments later, and he began throwing one ingredient at a time into the pill cauldron whilst explaining to the sect elders what they should be doing for the best results.

And because none of these alchemists could possibly replicate Su Yang's ridiculous alchemy skills, nor do they have his alchemy flames control, Su Yang must lower his abilities and the speed he concocted the pill to their standards, which meant he was spending many minutes on a single ingredient when he would usually spend a few seconds after tossing in all of the ingredients at once.

One hour... two hours... three hours...

Many hours have passed since Su Yang began his lecture with the sky turning dark long ago.

"This is the last ingredient and also the most important step so watch carefully." Su Yang said as he began the final step.

And even though the sect elders have been standing there like statues for multiple hours without any breaks and barely blinking their eyes, none of them appeared to be tired. In fact, their gazes all emitted a profound aura that was filled with energy and excitement.

After another hour, Su Yang retrieved his alchemy flames before taking the Soul Divination Pill out of the pill cauldron and showing it to the sect elders.

"Ooooh! It's real! This is really the Soul Divination Pill!"

"I cannot believe my eyes! I didn't think I would live long enough to see the existence of a second Soul Divination Pill!"

"Hahahaha! I have witnessed history today! I have witnessed history!!!"

All of the sect elders began acting like a bunch of children when they confirmed that it was possible to concoct the Soul Divination Pill.

"C-Can I hold it...?" Sect Master Zhu suddenly asked him in a shaky voice.

"Yes, and since I have no use for it, you can keep it." Su Yang said as he handed the pill to her.

"Heavens... I have never seen such a beautiful— perfect pill in my life before..."

Tears flowed from Sect Master Zhu's eyes as she held the flawless-quality Soul Divination Pill with trembling hands, and she'd even dropped to her knees a moment later.

The Four Seasons Academy has studied the Soul Divination Pill for many generations since the sect's foundation, so it meant an immense deal to her and the sect elders who managed to witness and experience their ancestors' dreams.

'Unbelievable... He really concocted the Soul Divination Pill just like that...' Lian Li stared at Su Yang with a dazed look on her face. Just how can one be talented and experienced in so many fields at once?

'Swords... Dual Cultivation... and now Alchemy? Is there anything that he cannot do?' Lian Li wondered to herself as the sect elders continued to celebrate this wondrous occasion.

Chapter 685 Lian Family's Ancestors

"Now that you know how to concoct the Soul Divination Pill, do you have any questions for me before I leave?" Su Yang asked them.

The sect elders nodded, and Su Yang proceeded to spend another hour answering all of their questions.

Once everything there calmed down, Sect Master Zhu said to Su Yang, "Once again, thank you for this."

Su Yang nodded and then turned to look at the morning sky. The Soul Divination Pill took him nearly the entire day to complete while using their alchemy methods.

"I am going to meet with Emperor Lian now," Su Yang said to Zhu Mengyi and Lian Li.

"You can stay here, and once I return, we will immediately head for the Eastern Continent."

"Okay." Zhu Mengyi nodded.

"Eastern Continent?" Lian Li looked at him with wide eyes. Why are they going there?

"Let's go," Su Yang said to Lian Li as he flew away and towards the Xie Family's living quarters.

Sometime later, they arrived at the location, and the Xie Family was already waiting for him outside.

"Su Yang—!"

Just as Xie Wang noticed Su Yang's approaching figure and opened his mouth to call out to Su Yang, he noticed the peerless beauty following Su Yang, and her beautiful appearance instantly made him speechless.

'Who is that beautiful fairy?! Her appearance rivals even Xing'er!' Xie Wang cried inwardly.

Even Lord Xie and Xie Xingfang were speechless when they saw the powerful aura surrounding Lian Li.

'A Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivator! And she looks so young!' Lord Xie stared at her with a gawking expression.

'What is her relationship with Su Yang? And why do I sense such a familiar feeling coming from her?' Xie Xingfang thought to herself.

As a fellow princess of an entire continent and a member of the royal family, Xie Xingfang could feel a connection to Lian Li, who also has a similar background.

"Are you all ready to meet Emperor Lian?" Su Yang asked them after descending.

"Yes... but who is that? Is she coming along with us?" Xie Wang couldn't hold his curiosity and asked.

"Want to introduce yourself?" Su Yang asked Lian Li.

Lian Li then stepped forward and gave them an elegant and courteous bow, "Hello, my surname is Lian— Lian Li, and I am the eldest daughter of the Lian Family."

"The Lian Family?! Then you're Emperor Lian's..." Lord Xie looked at her with wide eyes. No wonder why she had such a familiar aura! She was actually royalty— just like them!

"These guys are from the Eastern Continent, and just like your Lian Family, they— the Xie Family is ruling over the continent."

"Xie Family...? I have heard of the Xie Family, but I never thought I would get the chance to meet you." Lian Li said.

"What? You know of us? How?" Lord Xie asked her with a surprised face.

"Our ancestors, they have been to the Eastern Continent before, and that's when they met with your ancestors." Lian Li said.

"Really?! How come we don't have any records of your visit?!" Xie Wang looked at her with clear disbelief on his face.

"I don't know, but we have records of a Xie Family." Lian Li said.

"Unbelievable... to think our ancestors have met with people from the Holy Central Continent and kept silent about it..." Lord Xie shook his head.

"What if they didn't know that they'd met with someone from the Holy Central Continent? That could be a possibility." Xie Xingfang said.

"That's very possible since my ancestors were described as 'lowkey'." Lian Li nodded her head.

"We can all sit down and talk about this after we meet with Emperor Lian," Su Yang said to them.

He then turned to look at Lian Li and asked her, "Where can we find your father?"

"There's no need for us to fly there; I have a treasure that can directly transport us there." Lian Li said as she retrieved a necklace from her storage ring.

Lian Li brought the necklace closer to her mouth and gave it a gentle kiss.

The necklace then glowed bright red before shattering into tiny particles and forming a portal in front of Lian Li.

"This will teleport us near my home," said Lian Li before she walked into it without hesitation, disappearing into the portal.

Su Yang followed her shortly later, and the Xie Family followed him.

Upon coming out of the portal, they found themselves standing a few meters away from a city.

"This is Pearl City, one of the largest cities on the continent and also where my family is located," Lian Li said after everyone came out of the portal.

As they approached the city, the guards quickly noticed their presence.

"Your Highness!"

Every guard on duty immediately ran to greet them, as did the people that were waiting in line, and they all lowered their heads towards Lian Li.

Lian Li expressed her acknowledgment with a mere nod before ignoring them and entering the city.

Half an hour later, they reached the very center of the city, where another city wall was built, which was used to isolate the Lian Family from the rest of the world despite existing inside one of the largest cities.

"Your Highness!" The guards standing by the gates were surprised when they saw Lian Li's beautiful figure, as they didn't receive any news that she would be returning at this time.

"Open the gates. We have visitors," Lian Li said to them.

The guards looked at Su Yang and the Xie Family.

"The Xie Family and Su Yang, right? His Majesty, Emperor Lian is expecting your presence." The guards said to them.

Once the gates were opened, Lian Li led Su Yang and the others to the other side of the walls, and it appeared as though they'd entered another world, as it was a completely different scenery and environment past the gates, looking like they'd actually left the city instead.

"Huh? This is inside the city?" Even Xie Wang was surprised by this sudden change of environment.

"Yes, we are still at the center of the city," Lian Li said, and she continued, "This place was specially made since the Lian Family doesn't interact with the outside world unless necessary. There are even spiritual beasts and wildlife running around in this space, and this place takes up about 70% of the city. It's like a small world of its own."

Chapter 686 Meeting Emperor Lian

"A world of its own inside a city? What a unique idea..." Lord Xie nodded with acknowledgment, clearly amazed by this place.

"My home is only 50 miles from here," Lian Li said, and she began flying in a straight line.

Su Yang and the others followed.

Sometime later, they arrived before a massive mansion that took up at least a mile worth of space.

"Let's go inside." Lian Li said to them.

Once they entered the building, Lian Li brought them to the audience room.

She knocked on the door and said, "Esteemed father, I have brought your guests here."

"Come inside..." A clear voice resounded a moment later.

Lian Li opened the door and walked inside with the others.

"Lian Li? Why are you here? You should've told me that you were returning."

A handsome middle-aged man sat at the end of the long room, and a dozen experts at the Heavenly Spirit Realm stood on each side of the room.

Lian Li took a knee before Emperor Lian and spoke with her head slightly lowered, "I didn't plan this visit, esteemed father."

"Is that so...?" Emperor Lian then turned to look at the Xie Family.

"Welcome, Xie Family from the Eastern Continent. I have been briefed about your family by Senior Zhu. Although you may have come from a different continent, we are both royalties of similar stature, so I won't expect you to lower your head for me. Furthermore, our ancestors seemed to have a connection with your family's ancestors before." Emperor Lian said to them with a friendly smile on his face.

"Even though our status may be similar, you are still our Senior in terms of cultivation, and we will respect you as such, Senior Lian." Xie Wang stepped forward and gave him a courteous bow. "This one is named Xie Wang, and I have long retired from the throne after giving it to my son here."

Lord Xie then stepped forward and also bowed to Emperor Lian respectfully, "This Junior is called Xie Yimu, and I am the current ruler of the Eastern Continent. It's a pleasure to meet you, Senior Lian."

"And this is my daughter, Xie Xingfang." Lord Xie introduced her to him afterward.

"Greetings, Senior Lian." Xie Xingfang bowed.

Emperor Lian nodded and said, "Lian Po is my name, and as you already know, I am the current ruler of the Holy Central Continent. However, even though I bear the title of Emperor, I do not interact much with the outside world."

Emperor Lian then turned to look at Su Yang before narrowing his eyes slightly.

"You must be Su Yang. I must say, you look exactly like how I'd imagined after hearing about your atrocious deeds— arrogant and fearless." Emperor Lian said to him with a profound gaze. "Even now, you do not put me in your eyes."

"Eh? Atrocious deeds? What did you do, Su Yang?" Xie Wang asked him in a baffled voice.

Hearing his question, Su Yang shrugged and said, "So many things have happened in the last few days that I forgot about it."

"If you don't recall, why don't I help you refresh your memories?" Emperor Lian said before continuing a moment later, "Not only did you humiliate the owner of the Nine Spring Hall— one of the most renowned and famous places on the continent with countless powerful connections by dragging him around the street naked but you also split the Nine Spring Hall itself in half afterward, destroying over one thousand years of history along with it. I won't even mention the other part due to the sheer ridiculousness of it."

"Then you humiliated my son, Lian Heng, by viciously beating him in public and before thousands of his fellow disciples. However, that's not all, as you also openly challenged my Lian Family before humiliating my daughter over there."

By the time Emperor Lian recalled everything that has happened in the last two days, the Xie Family was soaked in cold sweats. Is that what Su Yang did when he left the Four Seasons Academy for two days? And what on earth was Su Yang thinking, offending the Lian Family right before their meeting? If they cannot obtain the Four Elements Root from Emperor Lian, it will be purely his fault!

Meanwhile, the dozen Heavenly Spirit Realm experts standing in the background stared at Su Yang with a fierce expression on their faces, clearly upset by his actions.

"Now that you mention it, I am starting to remember everything. However, you seemed to have left out a little information," Su Yang said a moment later.

And he continued a moment later, "Let's start with your son— Lian Heng. That idiot tried to covet my woman, who already has a child with me before my presence, even daring to threaten that he would use his authority to force her to become his woman. You are lucky that I didn't kill him."

"The audacity! How dare you address His Highness as an idiot?!"

"Apologize to His Majesty right now!"

"Why aren't you on your knees?!"

The Heavenly Spirit Realms Cultivators in the background immediately responded to his words.

Su Yang didn't even bother to look at them and said while looking at Lord Xie, "Doesn't this situation remind you of our first meeting? When your dogs barked at me?"

"Who are you calling dogs?!"

Right as the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators started moving, Emperor Lian suddenly shouted, "Get back!"

The Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators immediately stopped moving before returning to their positions, but their gaze remained on Su Yang, looking as though they wanted to beat him up.

"..."

Lord Xie looked at Su Yang with a speechless expression. This guy is really talented at pissing people off.

Once the place was quiet again, Emperor Lian said to Su Yang, "I know about his obsession for Wu Jingjing, hence why I won't be assisting him even though he'd asked for my help just the other day."

'That idiot dared to ask Father for help after his disgraceful performance?! How shameless! If I see that idiot again, I'll definitely give him a beating!' Lian Li cried inwardly after hearing that.

Chapter 687 Dried-up Corpse

"Since you know the deal with your own son, let's move onto the next topic— the Nine Spring Hall," Su Yang continued a moment later.

"Even though I have already forgiven her, your daughter here, Lian Li, plotted with the Nine Spring Hall and poisoned me with the intention of trying to humiliate me."

"..."

A guilty and regretful expression appeared on Lian Li after being reminded of her little prank.

"And in return, I destroyed the Nine Spring Hall and humiliated its owner. If you have a problem with that, I am willing to listen," Su Yang said as he stared at Emperor Lian with a calm expression on his face.

"I understand why you wanted to punish them, but must you destroy the entire place? Was humiliating Jiu Chun in such an extreme manner not enough to subdue your anger?" Emperor Lian asked him.

"Anger? I wouldn't say that I was angry." Su Yang said, and he continued, "If I have to be angry every time I want to do something extreme, I might as well not do anything at all since I am not easily angered."

"I destroyed the Nine Spring Hall as an example for what happens if one dares to mess with me even in the slightest. After all, I don't want Jiu Chun's friends testing their luck with me."

"..."

After a moment of silence, Emperor Lian spoke, but it was not related to any of the incidents caused by Su Yang: "You... Are you really related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue?"

"Immortal Fairy Su Yue?!"

The Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators and Lian Li looked at him with shocked looks on their faces. No wonder why his name sounded so familiar!

'Immortal Fairy Su Yue?' The Xie Family looked at him with raised eyebrows.

"What are you going to do if I said yes?" Su Yang asked him.

"..."

Emperor Lian narrowed his eyes slightly— he didn't dare to respond to such a critical question without thinking about it. If Su Yang turns out to be Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband, there was simply nothing he could do even if Su Yang decided to uproot the entire continent, as Immortal Fairy Su Yue's prowess far exceeded that of the Lian Family and the entire continent combined.

However, before Emperor Lian could even respond, Su Yang continued, "If you are wondering whether I am her husband or not, then I am not. But that is not to say our relationship is not an intimate one."

"I see..." Emperor Lian nodded with a profound look on his face. Nobody there could guess what he was thinking.

After a moment of silence, he spoke, "Anyway, putting the incidents to the side for now, why did you want an audience with me? Surely, you didn't come here just to challenge me, right?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "While that doesn't sound too bad, unfortunately, I am here on urgent matters. The Four Elements Root, you have heard of it, right? Well, I want it."

"..."

Emperor Lian frowned for a good minute after hearing Su Yang's words before speaking, "Why do you want the Four Elements Root?"

"Allow me to explain the situation, Senior Lian—" Xie Wang responded in Su Yang's stead, and he proceeded to explain the situation and Xie Xingfang's condition to Emperor Lian.

"A poisoned body, huh?" Emperor Lian pondered for a moment before continuing, "As much as I want to assist you, I cannot give you the Four Elements Root."

The Xie Family immediately frowned after hearing his words, and Lord Xie opened his mouth to ask, "May this Junior ask why, Senior Lian?"

Emperor Lian nodded his head and suddenly stood up from his seat.

"Follow me."

The Xie Family looked at Su Yang, who looked at Lian Li.

"This is probably about..."

A bitter expression appeared on Lian Li's expression before she spoke, "I think it would be better if you saw the situation yourself."

Su Yang nodded, and they followed Emperor Lian for a few minutes until they arrived outside of another room.

"This smell..." Su Yang frowned after his nose picked up a foul odor in the air.

'I see... so that's why he cannot give up the Four Elements Root, huh?' Su Yang thought to himself as he quickly realized the situation.

"Inside this room is my wife, Feng Xindou." Emperor Lian suddenly said to them, "However, she is currently ill."

After taking a deep breath, Emperor Lian opened the door, allowing them to see the scene inside.

Inside the vast room was a single bed with no other furniture, and there appeared to be a figure sleeping on the bed, yet there was something odd about this figure.

"What in Heaven's name..." Xie Wang's eyes widened with surprise when he saw the 'human' that was sleeping in the bed.

"That's your wife...?" Xie Xingfang covered her mouth from shock after seeing Feng Xindou, who looked more like a dried-up corpse than a human being.

"My wife used to be a healthy Cultivator, but out of the blue one day, she became extremely sick— to the point where she had to be bedridden. No doctors were able to figure out the reason she became like this, and obviously, none of them were able to find a cure either, and for the past ten years, she has been in this state with her condition only growing worse. However, one of the best doctors on this continent had a breakthrough last year, and he said that the Four Elements Root might have a chance to heal her, hence why I cannot give it to you." Emperor Lian explained to them.

After a long moment of silence, Xie Xingfang spoke, "I understand, Senior Lian. Don't worry, we won't take the Four Elements Root from you— especially not after seeing the condition of your wife."

"I'm truly sorry about this, young lady." Emperor Lian sighed. "Although I cannot give you the Four Elements Root, if I can do anything else to help you, I would not hesitate."

However, Su Yang suddenly spoke a moment later, "If I can heal your wife, will you give us the Four Elements Root?"

"Huh?"

Upon hearing Su Yang's sudden words, everyone there turned to look at him with wide eyes and dropped jaws, especially Emperor Lian, who held a dumbfounded look on his face, resembling a dumb chicken in that moment.

Chapter 688 No Matter What I Do to Your Wife

"C-C-Can you repeat that? I-I don't think I heard you properly just now..." Emperor Lian said to Su Yang in a shaky voice after a long moment of pure silence, his heart beating louder than it has ever experienced before.

Su Yang then said in a calm voice, "You don't need the Four Elements Root to heal your wife; her condition is quite complex, but I can heal her if you give me three days."

"REALLY?!" Emperor Lian could not control his excitement when he heard Su Yang's words, and he immediately grabbed Su Yang's shoulders.

"Unless you are a woman, I would prefer it if you don't touch my body," Su Yang said with slightly narrowed eyes that felt threatening.

"O-Oh... I apologize, where are my manners?" Emperor Lian quickly retrieved his hands and then continued, "Are you serious about that? If you can really heal my wife, I am willing to give you anything in my possession, much less the Four Elements Root!"

Su Yang patted his robes where Emperor Lian touched before speaking, "Her condition is caused by her unique body that produces an incredible amount of Yin Qi at a rapid rate, and if not discharged from her body after a period of time, her body will begin to experience backlashes, and in your wife's case, her body will grow weaker and weaker, as the balance of her Yin Qi and Profound Qi is completely messed up."

"Imbalance of Yin Qi and Profound Qi? How does that work? Even if that's the case, why is her condition so bad?" Emperor Lian asked him.

"Her case is a special one due to her unique body that produces much more Yin Qi than normal," Su Yang said, and he continued in a nonchalant voice and calm face, "When was the last time you had sex with her?"

"Excuse me?" Emperor Lian looked at him with wide eyes filled with disbelief.

"Did I stutter? I am asking you when was the last time you pleased her. The reason her body is like that is due to the extreme amount of Yin Qi that's contained within her body."

"Uhh... I believe we haven't done it ever since Lian Heng's birth..." Emperor Lian said in a reserved voice. He would've never imagined that he would one day speak of his activities with his wife to someone he'd just met.

"I understand," Su Yang nodded a moment later, "Anyway, give me three days with her and she'll be able to walk again after a few weeks of rest."

"R-Really?" Emperor Lian looked at him, still feeling doubtful about the whole situation.

If Su Yang wasn't related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue, he wouldn't even have considered letting Su Yang near his wife, much less 'heal' her condition that no doctor has been able to solve for many years.

"Yes, but I have two conditions," Su Yang suddenly said.

"T-Two conditions? What is it?" Emperor Lian asked him. If it'll help his wife recover, he'll accept any condition no matter how ridiculous it may be.

"The first condition is that nobody will be allowed to enter the room while I treat your wife until she is recovered— not even you."

"And the final condition is that you will not utter a single complaint no matter what I do to your wife, and you will not blame your wife after the treatment."

"..."

Emperor Lian looked at him with a dazed face. What kind of conditions were these? What is he going to do to his wife that would warrant such conditions? However, he was not in any position to refuse, as this might be his only hope of healing his wife.

"If you do not accept these conditions, I won't be able to help you or your wife. Although the Four Elements Root is important, it's not necessary for me to heal Xing'er," Su Yang said to him.

"I accept! I accept your conditions so please help my wife!" Emperor Lian quickly said to him in a pleading voice.

Su Yang nodded and then turned to look at the dazed Xie Family, "Looks like we'll be here a little longer than anticipated."

"Give me a piece of paper and something to write with— I will list out all of the ingredients required for this treatment," Su Yang said a moment later.

"Somebody get a piece of paper and a brush!" Emperor Lian shouted at the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators standing not too far away.

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

They quickly scrambled around.

A few minutes later, they returned with some paper and multiple brushes.

Su Yang proceeded to write out a list of ingredients and medicine and handed it to Emperor Lian.

"The quicker you gather these things the faster I will be able to start my treatment," he said.

Hearing his words, Emperor Lian shouted again, "You all heard him! I want everything on this list within four hours! I don't care how you get it! Even if you have to snatch it from a baby's hand, you will do it! I will compensate for everything later!"

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

The dozen Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators took a second to memorize all of the ingredients on the list before running away at max speed.

Meanwhile, Su Yang said as he entered the room, "I am going to take a closer look at her in the meantime."

Once he was beside the bed, Su Yang gently pressed two of his fingers onto Feng Xindou's neck, feeling her dry and dead skin.

'Hmm... Her condition is worse than I'd expected...' Su Yang thought to himself as he inspected her body with his spiritual sense.

"How is my mother?" Lian Li approached him from behind before asking in a low voice.

"Not good," Su Yang shook his head. "There's too much Yin Qi built up in her body. The only reason she lasted this long is due to her cultivation base at the Sovereign Spirit Realm. If she had been in the Heavenly Spirit Realm, she would've probably died long ago. However, she's not hopeless."

"If you say she can be saved, I'll believe you, Su Yang." Lian Li said to him, her eyes filled with a sense of unwavering trust.

Chapter 689 Virgin's Blood

Only three hours have passed since Emperor Lian ordered his people to gather the ingredients listed by Su Yang, and the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators have already returned to their side with every single ingredient on the list.

"Here's everything you asked for." Emperor Lian handed the ingredients to Su Yang.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I will immediately begin the treatment. Don't bother us no matter what for the next 3 days."

Emperor Lian nodded with a resolute expression on his face. Even though he can already imagine what Su Yang might do to his wife, it was required for her recovery, and he is willing to endure anything to see her healthy once again.

After accepting the storage ring that contained the ingredients, Su Yang went into Feng Xindou's room before sealing the doors.

"Your Majesty, do you think he'll really be able to heal Her Majesty?" The Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators asked him in a doubtful voice.

"I don't know, but we can only hope that he can..." Emperor Lian sighed.

"If Su Yang claims that he can help Senior Feng recover then I have no doubt that he'll be able to save her," Xie Xingfang suddenly said with a confident expression on her face.

"You..." The people there looked at her with a dazed look.

"I also believe in him," Lian Li suddenly said, surprising everyone there.

"I understand why she would say such words but you...? What makes you trust him so much? Didn't you try to poison him not long ago?" Emperor Lian asked her with his eyes wide with surprise.

"..." Lian Li immediately became speechless. Why must everyone keep bringing that up?

"Because I have witnessed his Alchemy skills," she said a moment later. "Father may not know this since it happened right before we arrived here but Su Yang... he... he successfully concocted the Soul Divination Pill that has challenged every Alchemist in the world for generations."

"What did you say?! The Soul Divination Pill?!" The Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators immediately expressed their shock, even forgetting her status for a moment.

"Is that true?" Emperor Lian asked her for confirmation, not daring to believe his ears.

The Soul Divination Pill has troubled them for as long as he could remember. To think Su Yang would concoct a pill that nobody else could after hundreds of years.

"Yes, since I watched him do it with Sect Master Zhu and many other sect elders." Lian Li nodded.

"Since we are on the topic, I might as well add that Su Yang... he has revolutionized Alchemy in the Eastern Continent with his godlike Alchemy skills and a few pills he'd brought into existence." Lord Xie suddenly said.

"Revolutionized Alchemy?" The people there looked at him with wide eyes, as that was a bold claim.

"Yes, it's a pill called the Earth Advancement Pill and Heaven Transcendence Pill, which will allow Cultivators to breakthrough to the Earth Spirit Realm and the Heavenly Spirit Realm with ease."

"What on earth! How can such heaven-defying pills exist?!" Emperor Lian exclaimed.

However, Lord Xie merely shrugged his shoulders, as he had no answer for such a question.

Meanwhile, inside the room, Su Yang laid the ingredients on the floor before he retrieved an ordinary cauldron and tossed a few of the ingredients inside.

A few minutes later, he retrieved the liquid from the cauldron and poured it into a glass bottle.

This liquid was bright red, resembling fresh blood, but it was more translucent than blood.

Su Yang then approached the bed and looked at the dried-up figure that is Feng Xindou and said to her in a low voice, "I know you can hear me since you are awake. My name is Su Yang, and I am going to help cure your condition that is caused by your unique body that produces more Yin Qi than what one would normally produce."

"However, since this is related to your Yin Qi, I am going to have to touch your body and make you release your Yin Qi. Though, I cannot touch your body for now since your body is not in the right condition."

"What I have in my hand right now is called 'Virgin's Blood', and it will help you release some of your Yin Qi."

Su Yang then removed the soft blankets that covered Feng Xindou's body, revealing her body that resembled a dried-up corpse.

"I am going to pour it on you now."

After saying such words, Su Yang tilted the glass bottle and poured the Virgin's Blood onto her body.

A few seconds after Feng Xindou was submerged in the translucent red liquid, her body began trembling slightly, and Yin Qi began leaking from between her legs.

However, unlike what a healthy lady would release, Feng Xindou's Yin Qi was stained with blood, making it look like she was bleeding inside.

"I am going to leave you like this for a few hours. Just forget about everything and enjoy it for now."

Su Yang then returned to the cauldron, and he began concocting a few more things whilst Feng Xindou was bathing in the Virgin's Blood.

A few hours later, Su Yang returned to Feng Xindou's side, and there was a large puddle of red Yin Qi surrounding her body. However, there were also some changes to Feng Xindou's body, as her skin no longer looked as dried-up as before, even looking a little bit glossy.

Su Yang waved his sleeves, sending the blood-stained Yin Qi to the end of the room.

"Your body is looking a lot better, but it's still nowhere near being healthy again," he said to her as he retrieved a bottle of semi-transparent liquid that he'd just created.

"This is called Euphoric Oil, and it'll enhance the effects of the Virgin's Blood. Now that your body is better, we can speed up the process a little bit."

Su Yang then poured the entire bottle of Euphoric Oil onto her body, before pouring another bottle of Virgin's Blood.

A few seconds later, Feng Xindou's body began trembling again as it released more Yin Qi, and it was coming out at a much faster rate than before.

Chapter 690 Treating Feng Xindou

Nearly an entire day has passed since Su Yang began treating Feng Xindou, yet he hasn't touched a single hair on her body, only pouring Virgin's Blood and a few other medicines on her body.

On the second day, Feng Xindou's appearance looked vastly different compared to the first day of treatment, and she no longer resembled a dried-up corpse. However, her body was still very skinny, and her complexion was pale, looking very unhealthy, and malnourished.

As Su Yang poured a new bottle of Virgin's Blood onto Feng Xindou's body, her lips moved slightly, and a hoarse voice resounded, "Thank... you... Su... Yang..."

Su Yang smiled after hearing her voice, and he said, "I see that you're capable of speaking now. That's good news, but don't push yourself, and you can thank me after you have completely recovered."

"Un..." Feng Xindou nodded her head slightly before closing her eyes again.

A few moments later, Feng Xindou's body began releasing more Yin Qi, but it was no longer stained with blood and resembled clear water in a clean pond.

A few more hours later, Su Yang returned to her side, but he didn't have any more Virgin's Blood in his hands.

"This is a pill that will help you recover some strength; it contains some Profound Qi of the Yang Element inside, which will help you subdue your Yin Qi to a certain degree."

After a brief explanation, Su Yang tossed the pill into his mouth before crushing it with his teeth and drinking some water. Once he mixed the pill and the water inside his mouth, Su Yang opened Feng Xindou's mouth with his hands before feeding the medicine to her through his own mouth.

Towards the end of the second day, Feng Xindou no longer looked malnourished and appeared no different than any other healthy women, even looking mighty stunning with her smooth skin and a beautiful pale complexion.

"As expected of Lian Li's mother— you are quite an exquisite woman." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his handsome face.

"..."

Feng Xindou looked at her own fair hands while she laid on the bed, seemingly in a daze.

"I thought... I thought I was going to die while being in that horrifying state for the remainder of my life..." she mumbled with teary eyes sometime later.

"Well, that is most likely what would've happened if I didn't come here by chance," Su Yang said to her.

"Yes, and I owe my life to you, my savior..." Feng Xiandou who profoundly resembled Lian Li turned to look at him with a passionate gaze, clearly feeling some sort of affection towards him, who just pulled her out from a dark and empty hole and saved her life.

"Don't get ahead of yourself just yet— you have not completely recovered. In fact, we are only halfway there," Su Yang said to her.

"Really? But I feel just fine..." Feng Xindou said with a puzzled face.

"That is only a temporary feeling since I'd submerged your body in medicine for two whole days now. If I don't finish my treatment, you'll simply return to that corpse-like state a few weeks later."

"!!!" Feng Xindou's body trembled in fear after hearing his words.

"What else needs to be done, savior? I'll do anything you need!" she quickly said to him, as she would rather die than return to that pathetic and horrifying state.

"If we continue to treat you the same way I have been treating you for the past two days, it'll take many weeks, even months to completely heal your body, and there'll be a shortage problem for the supplies used to create the medicine. Therefore, I am going to speed the process up by physically touching you, if you don't mind."

"Physically touch my body...?" Feng Xiandou looked down at her own body, which was completely naked at this moment.

"I know you already have a caring husband, but—"

"It's fine," she suddenly interrupted him.

"Hm?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a slightly surprised manner.

"Ever since I gave birth to my second child, Lian Heng, I haven't received any affection from my husband for many decades. Although I cannot bear to betray him with another man, there is only so much a woman can endure before she makes mistakes..."

Feng Xiandou then looked at Su Yang and asked him, "Since I am your patient and you are treating me, this is only considered treatment, right?"

After a moment of silence, Su Yang nodded his head, "That's right. This is part of the treatment, and I have already let your husband know that this might happen, and he has already accepted it."

"Thank you for telling me that, I already feel less guilty..." Feng Xindou said with a relieved smile as she laid on the bed again.

"Go ahead, doctor. Do whatever you need for the 'treatment'." Feng Xindou said to him with her eyes closed.

Su Yang then climbed onto the bed before caressing her smooth skin with the tip of his fingers, sending chills all over her body.

After completely familiarizing himself with the feeling of Feng Xiandou's body, Su Yang moved his hands towards her lower body, gently sliding his fingers down her slender legs before teasing the slit between her legs, brushing past the black bush directly above her cave.

"I... I haven't gotten the chance to personally clean that area for many years now..." Feng Xindou said in a bashful voice, referring to the patch of pubic hair down there. "I-If it's bothering you, I can remove it..."

Because having hair down there for women is seen as unhygienic, unladylike, and disliked by many men who prefer their women 'pure' and 'spotless', most women usually keep that place clean and spotless by removing the hair with medicine or using a cultivation technique that prevents hair from growing down there.

"It's fine," Su Yang said to her in a relaxed voice, "Although some might dislike it, I don't mind it. In fact, it makes you appear more mature and unique."

"Su Yang..."

Empress Feng Xindou nodded her head afterward, no longer feeling as embarrassed about her bush.

Chapter 691 Decades of Sexual Frustration

"Mmm~"

"Aaaa~"

"Oooh~"

Feng Xindou moaned softly as Su Yang gently caressed the area around and outside her cave entrance. Since her body was still fragile, Su Yang didn't dare to touch her too intensively.

Once Feng Xindou was familiarized and comfortable with the feeling of his hands, Su Yang suddenly slipped one of his fingers into her cave whilst rubbing the pink pearl at the same time.

"Aaaahn!"

Feng Xindou's body trembled at the sudden invasion, and her body released a flow of Yin Qi. Then with his other hand, Su Yang began massaging her perfectly shaped breasts that were neither too firm nor too soft and fitted into his grasp flawlessly.

"This... This feels amazing, Su Yang! Are you really just a doctor?" Feng Xindou asked him as her body overflowed with passion and satisfaction.

"Being a doctor is only a hobby and I only become one when it's necessary. I'm actually a Dual Cultivator," he said to her.

"A Dual Cultivator? No wonder why you have such amazing hands and techniques! Your partners must be filled with bliss then!"

"It's my responsibility as a man and their partner to do so, after all," Su Yang said with a smile on his handsome face.

After massaging Feng Xindou for many minutes, she suddenly grabbed his hands and spoke while staring at him with a lustful gaze, "Do you think you can... stick your thing inside me?"

"You want me to stick me what inside what?" Su Yang said with a smile.

"Ahn~! You dare to tease me, the Empress?" Feng Xindou spoke in a playful voice, and she continued a moment later, "I want your dick inside my lonely vagina, Su Yang."

Su Yang nodded and he said, "Don't worry, you'll get it later. Your body still needs some more time to get accustomed to the sensation."

Although she was a little saddened that she had to wait, Feng Xindou understood his intentions, and she nodded her head and allowed him to continue pleasing her body with his hands.

A few hours later, once Feng Xindou was getting impatient again, she asked Su Yang, "What about now, Su Yang? I think my body is ready to take any challenge from you."

"Let me check your body's condition..." Su Yang suddenly increased the intensity of his techniques, sending Feng Xindou's body into a state of extreme ecstasy.

"Aaaaaah~!"

"Aaaah~!"

Aaaaaahn~!"

Feng Xindou moaned loudly for the next few minutes, feeling as though her entire body was on fire.

A few more minutes later, Su Yang suddenly stopped and removed his soaked hands from her bottom lips and nodded, "Okay, you're ready."

He then stood up and loosened his robes.

"Oh my..." Feng Xindou covered her mouth from shock when she saw just how massive his rod was, exceeding all of her expectations.

"What a majestic and domineering weapon you have there, Su Yang..." she said to him.

Su Yang merely smiled at her words as he knelt between her legs with his ruler pointing at Feng Xindou's entrance that was leaking Yin Qi as it waited in anticipation.

After rubbing his shaft on her swollen pink pearl for a few more moments, Su Yang finally inserted his weapon into the Empress's body, invading her hole and spreading her inner walls that hadn't been touched for decades.

"Heavens!" Feng Xindou tightly held onto the bedsheets as she endured the feeling of Su Yang's thick rod slowly going deeper into her body until it reached the very end of the cave.

"I-If I had to endure so many years of suffering just so I can experience this... I think it was very worth it..." Feng Xindou mumbled in a low voice after Su Yang's entire shaft was inside her body.

"How do you feel?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

"It feels like this is my first time all over again..." she said with a smile on her face.

"Then I'll begin moving now."

"Yes, go ahead..."

"Mmm!"

Feng Xindou moaned with her mouth closed, feeling an indescribable sensation flowing through her body.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aah~!"

After a few minutes of thrusting, Feng Xindou could already feel her body growing stronger and more energetic.

"W-What kind of miracle is this? It feels like I am gaining more energy as we continue doing this!" she exclaimed.

"My Yang Qi is a bit special, and it'll help suppress your condition," he said to her.

"I don't care what's happening! I just want more!" Feng Xindou suddenly sat up and began riding Su Yang's shaft on her own.

Su Yang then grabbed onto her round buttocks and assisted her movements, pounding her vigorously.

"Aahhh~!"

"Aaaaaah~!"

"Aahhhhhh!"

Feng Xindou's hole continuously flowed with Yin Qi they cultivated, and within an hour of cultivation, her body had already almost fully recovered.

"More... more... Ahhhh~!"

As many decades of sexual frustration were finally being satisfied, Feng Xindou continued to cultivate with Su Yang for many hours on end, not even taking breaks.

And coupled with her cultivation base at the seventh level Sovereign Spirit Realm, Feng Xindou was barely able to handle Su Yang's profound techniques.

"I'm going to release some more Yang Qi into you," Su Yang suddenly said.

"Release all you want into me, Su Yang! Even if I get pregnant, I won't complain!" Feng Xindou said with a lustful expression on her face.

A moment later, hot Yang Qi flowed into her body, yet they did not stop cultivating.

Their cultivation session lasted for many hours until the end of the day, and by the end, Feng Xindou laid on the bed with a sweaty body and her cave filled with Su Yang's Yang Qi.

"Thank you... Su Yang... for not only saving me from that terrifying condition but also satisfying my sexual frustration that had built up for many decades..." Feng Xindou said to him in a gentle voice. "If there's anything I can do for you as the Empress, don't hesitate to ask me."

Chapter 692 The Empress's Recovery

"Hey, Su Yang... do you have a wife yet? Or partners you are dedicated to?" Feng Xindou suddenly asked him as he got dressed.

"Yes, I do— many, in fact." He answered without hesitation. "Why do you ask?"

"Well, I have a daughter who is just as beautiful if not even more beautiful than me, and I was wondering if you would be willing to consider taking her as one of your partners. Although she can be a bit of a hassle sometimes, she's not a bad girl, and I'm sure that she'll be a great addition to your family." Feng Xindou said, surprisingly offering her own daughter to him.

"Oh? I am willing to listen to your reasons right now," Su Yang said with a mysterious smile on his face.

"As much as I want to become your woman, I am already married to a faithful husband, and while he has neglected me for some time now, I know that he still cares about me deeply, or he would've long given up on me and found another woman to marry."

"However, my daughter, Lian Li... she's still a pure maiden as far as I'm aware, and I am simply trying to fulfill my job as a mother by finding a suitable partner for her," Feng Xindou explained to him.

Hearing her words, Su Yang suddenly approached her and caressed her face while speaking in a seducing voice, "So what you're saying is... you don't want to become my woman? If you become my woman, I can satisfy your lust every day, and you even get to experience much better things than what happened today."

"..."

Feng Xindou looked at him with a surprised face, seemingly shocked speechless by his sudden approach.

"I-if you say something like that, I will really..."

However, before Feng Xindou could finish her sentence, Su Yang gave her a gentle but passionate kiss on the lips for a good moment before distancing himself.

Su Yang then said to her in a calm voice, "That was a farewell kiss. If it was a few thousand years ago, when I was still seducing every woman I set my eyes on without a care for the world, I would've definitely taken you for myself. However, you still have a caring husband, and I only take away women from those who don't deserve them."

"As for your daughter, Lian Li... I will think about it."

"A few thousand years ago...?"

Feng Xindou stared at him with wide eyes filled with wonder, and she pondered inwardly, 'Just who are you, Su Yang...?'

However, before she could ask him that question, Su Yang was already opening the door.

"I will let them know that you've completely recovered so you can come out whenever you are ready," Su Yang said to her before leaving the room and closing the door.

Once Su Yang left her alone, Feng Xindou laid on the bed while staring at the ceiling with a dazed look.

'If only I had met you earlier...' she sighed inwardly.

Meanwhile, standing outside Feng Xindou's room were Emperor Lian and the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators with a few extra additions— unfamiliar faces Su Yang is seeing for the first time.

"Su Yang! How is my wife?!" Emperor Lian quickly asked after seeing Su Yang leave the room, his heart beating so hard it could be considered having an anxiety attack.

"Calm down, your wife is fine, and she has completely recovered from her condition." Su Yang said with a calm expression.

"R-Really?! T-Thank heavens!" Emperor Lian felt the strength in his legs disappear, causing him to fall onto the floor with tears in his eyes.

"Heavens! Am I hearing this right?! Her Majesty has actually recovered after being treated by him?!" The unfamiliar faces exclaimed in shocked voices.

"Who are you guys?" Su Yang asked them with raised eyebrows.

"W-We are the doctors that have been trying to treat Her Majesty but to no avail! Please! Can you tell us how you treated her condition?!" The doctors asked him.

"Oh, so you're the useless bunch that couldn't even cure a single woman, huh? Well, if you want to know how I treated her, you should ask her yourself." Su Yang shook his head.

"U-Useless bunch...?" The doctors there were speechless, as their first time being cursed at by someone that was not Emperor Lian! They were all renowned doctors respected by the majority of the people in the Holy Central Continent, too!

"I am going to see my wife!" Emperor Lian said as he approached the room.

However, he was immediately stopped by Su Yang, who blocked his path with a single arm.

"W-What is the meaning of this? If she's healed, why can't I see her?" Emperor Lian asked him with a puzzled frown.

"There's no need to be so impatient. She will come out when she's ready. However, if you insist on going in now, I won't be responsible for whatever happens afterward," Su Yang shook his head.

"I-Is that so..." Emperor Lian looked at him with a dazed face, unsure how he should feel about this.

"Why don't you get me my Four Elements Root in the meantime? You can hand it to me after you see your wife later if you are still doubtful," Su Yang said to Emperor Lian, and he continued a moment later, "Anyway, where are the others?"

"They should be resting in the guest room with my daughter," Emperor Lian said.

"Somebody bring him to the guest room! And one of you prepare the Four Elements Root!" Emperor Lian said to the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators.

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

Even when Su Yang was gone, Emperor Lian continued to wait in front of Feng Xindou's room.

Many minutes later, the door suddenly opened, and a beautiful woman wearing majestic robes walked out of the room, bearing a domineering aura around her that was fitting of an Empress.

"M-My wife! Y-You have really recovered!" Seeing her beautiful figure, Emperor Lian immediately approached her, yet he didn't dare to touch her, fearing that her body was still weak.

"I'm sorry for making you worry, my dear..." Feng Xindou said to him with a gentle smile on her face.

Chapter 693 Do You Still Want to Be My Woman?

"A-Are you sure you should be walking around, my wife? You had spent many years in that condition, after all..." Emperor Lian said to Feng Xindou when she began walking around.

"It's because I have spent many years unable to move that I want to move around! And you don't need to worry about my condition, as I am confident that something like this won't affect me," she said.

If she could cultivate with Su Yang for many hours without any breaks, she shouldn't have any problems with just walking around.

"Y-Your Majesty! Although you seem healthy, we do not know for sure whether or not you have fully recovered, so allow us to examine your body just in case." The doctors there suddenly said to her.

However, Feng Xindou narrowed her eyes at them and spoke in a cold voice, "Are you doubting my savior's ability? None of you have the right to doubt him when you couldn't even do a damn thing about my condition for many years, whilst Su Yang managed to help me walk in just three days! Shame on all of you!"

"..."

The doctors there immediately lowered their heads in shame after hearing Feng Xindou's words, and there was nothing they could say that would save their faces at this point, as it was simply a fact that they were helpless against her condition.

"Anyway, where is Su Yang? What about Lian Li? Is she still at the Holy Sword Academy? I want her to return here as soon as possible." Feng Xindou no longer bothered with the doctors and asked Emperor Lian.

"Lian Li? She's already here," he said. "As for Su Yang, he should be in the guest room with the other guests."

"Lian Li is already here? That makes things much easier," she nodded.

"Why do you need her?" Emperor Lian asked her.

"I plan on making her Su Yang's partner," she answered without hesitation.

"W-What?! You want to make our daughter that man's partner?!" Emperor Lian looked at her with wide eyes filled with shock, as this is the last thing he'd expected to come out of her mouth when she'd just recovered from her illness.

"Why are you so surprised? Or do you reject such an idea?" Feng Xindou narrowed her eyes at him.

"N-No... but the situation is much more complicated than you think..." Emperor Lian said. Even though it has been many years since they spoke with each other, Feng Xindou's overbearing aura still frightens him sometimes.

"Complicated? How so?" Feng Xindou frowned.

"Well..." Emperor Lian proceeded to explain the situation to her— everything from Lian Heng's deeds to what happened at and to the Nine Spring Hall.

By the end of everything, Feng Xindou's body was trembling, and her face was fuming in anger.

"That useless son and that stupid daughter of mine! How could they do such things to Su Yang?! Luckily for them, Su Yang is a compassionate gentleman, or else I would still be rotting away in that bed right now!" Feng Xindou shouted at Emperor Lian as though it was his fault for not teaching their children properly.

"I will personally deal with our boy later. Bring me to our daughter now!" she said in a fierce voice.

"Right away..." Emperor Lian swallowed nervously, not daring to argue with Feng Xindou when she's this heated.

Meanwhile, in the guest room, where the Xie Family and Lian Li were gathered, Lian Li quickly ran up to Su Yang after seeing him return.

"Su Yang! How's my mother?" she asked him.

"The treatment went as planned— she's perfectly fine," Su Yang said to her.

"Thank you, Su Yang... Really, thank you..." Lian Li nearly fell onto her knees from relief.

Sometime later, the door opened again, and Emperor Lian and Feng Xindou entered the room.

"Mother!"

Despite the cold expression on Feng Xindou's face and the nervous look on Emperor Lian's face, Lian Li approached them with a bright face, clearly happy to see her mother healthy and walking.

However, right as Lian Li got close to Feng Xindou, a loud and crisp slapping sound echoed in the room, causing everybody there to look at them with wide eyes.

"M-Mother...?" Lian Li looked at her mother with a dazed look after being slapped so suddenly, wondering what she'd done wrong to deserve such a slap.

"I have heard everything from your father! How could you do something as stupid as poisoning my savior?! And to think I was trying to help you out! Now I look like a damn fool!" Feng Xindou yelled at her.

"Trying to help me out?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows.

Feng Xindou then looked at Su Yang and said, "I'm truly sorry for the trouble my children have caused you, Su Yang. I will definitely punish them later. As for what we talked about before... I doubt you would be willing to accept a woman who tried to poison you..."

"What...?" Lian Li looked at Feng Xindou with her wide eyes filled with shock. She didn't think her mother would try to hook her up with Su Yang behind her back!

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke with a calm smile on his face, "While it is true that she has tried to poison me, I have already forgiven her. As for whether or not I'm willing to accept her..."

Su Yang then turned to look at Lian Li and continued, "What do you think? Do you still want to be my woman?"

"Eh?" It was Feng Xindou's turn to be surprised now. "Still...?"

"Hm? Oh, that's right, we haven't mentioned it yet. Do you want to tell them, Lian Li?" Su Yang asked her.

Lian Li nodded and turned to look at her father and mother and spoke, "I... I have already given my body to him..."

"..."

Feng Xindou's jaw dropped, as did Emperor Lian and everyone else in the room.

'Despite being brought up in a similar lifestyle as me, she actually managed to accept Su Yang...?' Xie Xingfang looked at Lian Li with disbelief on her face.

Chapter 694 Four Elements Roo

"W-Wait a second! W-What do you mean by that? Does this mean you and Su Yang already...?" Feng Xindou stared at Lian Li with a gawking expression.

"Yes, I have taken her Pure Yin Essence," Su Yang said in a calm voice.

"..." Lian Li's face flushed with redness as her parents stared at her with intensive gazes.

"Anyway, I may be from the Eastern Continent, but I am actually from another world that exists beyond this starry sky," Su Yang suddenly said, causing the Lian Family to stare at him with wide eyes.

"There's no need to look so surprised. In fact, I am not the only person in this world that came from beyond the starry sky. The person you all know as 'Immortal Fairy Su Yue' is also not from this world."

"Immortal Fairy Su Yue!" Emperor Lian mumbled in a surprised voice.

"Well, since you know my real background now, do you still want to come with me? If you decide to leave this world with me, I can't guarantee you that you'll be able to return to this world," Su Yang said while looking at Lian Li, who held a dazed look on her beautiful face.

"I..." Lian Li didn't dare to make the decision by herself and turned to look at her parents for help.

However, Emperor Lian deliberately turned his head away so they couldn't make eye contact. As for Feng Xindou, she had a look on her face that said: "Do you really need our help with such an obvious choice?"

Seeing this, Lian Li showed a bittersweet smile on her face before she turned to look at Su Yang and spoke, "If you don't mind bringing me with you, I am willing to follow you no matter where or how far you go in the starry sky."

Hearing her words, Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face, "I will never refuse company from a beauty, especially one at your quality."

"Does that mean..." Lian Li's eyes flickered with excitement.

"Yes, I'll bring you with me if that's what you truly want."

"Thank you, Su Yang!" Lian Li quickly ran to him and gave him a passionate embrace.

Meanwhile, Xie Wang nudged Xie Xingfang with his elbow and mumbled to her, "If someone like Lian Li could accept Su Yang for who he is, there's no reason why you shouldn't be able to do the same. However, at the end of the day, it all depends on how much you want to be with him."

"..." Xie Xingfang did not say anything and merely nodded her head in silence, her expression looking like she was thinking about many things.

Sometime later, the Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators returned while carrying a 6-feet long golden box, "Your Majesty, we have brought the Four Elements Root!"

Emperor Lian nodded and said, "Give it to Su Yang."

Once the golden box was in his hands, Su Yang opened it to reveal the Four Elements Root that looked like an oversized root with four long roots, each a different color that resembled the four elements—water, fire, earth, and wind.

"Wow... I would've never imagined the Four Elements Root would turn out to be this massive of a treasure... It's taller than most adult humans!" Xie Wang expressed his awe after seeing the Four Elements Root for the first time.

"Are you satisfied with this? If there's anything else you need, just let me know and I will try my best to get it for you." Emperor Lian said to him sometime later.

"Since you mentioned it, I won't be humble." Su Yang then retrieved a brush and piece of paper and wrote the names of a few ingredients onto it before handing it to Emperor Lian.

"These are..."

A few beads of sweat appeared on Emperor Lian's forehead after he finished reading Su Yang's list.

"You really weren't lying when you said you won't be humble..."

"What? You can't do it?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Emperor Lian closed his eyes and took a deep breath before speaking, "Despite the fact that everything you listed here is worth more than the Four Elements Root since you saved my wife's life, I will help you this once."

"It'll also take a few weeks to gather these items, too."

Su Yang nodded, "That's fine. I'll have someone come pick it up once it's ready."

Su Yang then looked at the Xie Family and said, "Now that we have the Four Elements Root, are you ready to return to the Eastern Continent?"

"While I would love to stay here for a bit longer, we still have to heal Xing'er condition." Xie Wang stood up and said.

"You're leaving already, Su Yang? Why don't you stay here for a few more days?" Feng Xindou asked him, seemingly reluctant to see him go so quickly.

"I would love to, but I am currently in the process of treating her, so I'll have to return another time," Su Yang said as he pointed at Xie Xingfang.

"Oh... I apologize, young lady... I didn't know you were his patient, too..." Feng Xindou said to Xie Xingfang.

"It's okay," Xie Xingfang shook her head.

"Well, knowing Su Yang, he'll definitely be able to treat whatever problems that you may have, as I have personally experienced his abilities." Feng Xindou said.

"I know... I also trust that Su Yang will be able to help me recover," Xie Xingfang said with a smile on her face.

'This girl... she's definitely a worthy rival for my daughter...' Feng Xindou thought to herself after seeing Xie Xingfang's noble demeanor.

"Lian Li!"

Feng Xindou suddenly approached her and embraced her. "I won't apologize for slapping you just now since you still wronged Su Yang, but I hope you can become someone important to him, and I won't forgive you if you ever return here empty-handed."

"Empty-handed...?" Lian Li looked at her mother with a confused expression on her face.

"I'm talking about my grandchildren, you silly!" Feng Xindou chuckled, immediately making Lian Li blush. "I better be a grandmother the next time we meet! Don't even come back here if you don't have my grandchildren with you!"

"I... I understand, mother..." Lian Li nodded with her face blooming with redness.

Chapter 695 Handshake

"Su Yang, I know my daughter may have made mistakes in the past, but I hope you can treat her with love as you did with me..." Feng Xindou pulled Su Yang to the side and whispered to him.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Don't worry, I won't treat her any differently because of what happened. And even though I may not be able to physically please you, my presence will still be here one way or another..."

"What do you mean by that?" Feng Xindou raised her eyebrows, seemingly puzzled by his last sentence.

Su Yang merely smiled before turning to look at Emperor Lian.

"Hey, take this and study it."

Emperor Lian quickly went to catch whatever Su Yang just threw at him.

"Even though your wife has recovered from her condition, she's not completely safe, as she still needs to continuously release her Yin Qi to prevent it from happening again in the future. Therefore, as her husband, you will have to bear that responsibility and treat her with love and passion at least once a week. That piece of scroll contains a few techniques that will help you and your wife in multiple ways."

"If you continue to neglect your wife, someone else might take her away from you, and that person might be me, so it would be in your best interest to start loving her more." Su Yang said with a smile as he walked outside, dumbfounding Emperor Lian.

"Su Yang..." Even Feng Xindou couldn't help but blush after hearing his words.

As for Lian Li, she was staring at her mother with a dazed look on her face, silently wondering to herself what happened between them during the treatment?

Sometime later, once Su Yang, the Xie Family, and Lian Li were outside, Su Yang retrieved the large flying ship and tossed it into the air before it expanded into the size of a real battleship.

Once everyone boarded the ship, Su Yang navigated it to fly towards the Four Seasons Academy.

"Haaa..." Feng Xindou released a profound sigh as she watched the flying ship quickly disappear from the scene.

Seeing this, Emperor Lian couldn't help but ask her, "Did something happen between the two of you?"

Hearing his question, Feng Xindou merely smiled and said, "He treated me like a woman, but you probably already know that, right? Su Yang wasn't lying when he said that he might take me away if you don't start loving me again."

"I-I wouldn't dare to neglect you after what happened! I swear I will love you every day for the rest of our lives!" Emperor Lian said as he followed Feng Xindou back into the palace.

Meanwhile, Su Yang and the other returned to the Four Seasons Academy a few minutes later.

"Su Yang! You're back! How did your meeting with Emperor Lian go? I didn't think you would be gone for so long so I was beginning to worry something might have happened to you," Zhu Mengyi greeted him with a wide smile on her face while Zhu Jiayi expressed her desire to be held by Su Yang by waving her arms at him.

"You are right, something did happen, but it wasn't anything troublesome," Su Yang said as he took Zhu Jiayi from her mother's arms.

"Anyway, are you ready to leave? I can tell you about it later."

"Yes, I have already said my farewells to my mother and my friends in this place."

"Good, then we'll go pick up Wu Jingjing before we leave for the Eastern Continent."

Once Zhu Mengyi was on the flying ship, Su Yang navigated it towards the Holy Sword Academy next.

Meanwhile, Sect Master Zhu watched as the flying ship and Zhu Mengyi disappeared from the Four Seasons Academy.

"Good luck, my little girl. I'm sure you'll achieve great things with someone like Su Yang by your side."

A few minutes after Su Yang left the Four Seasons Academy, they reached the Holy Sword Academy, and Wu Jingjing was already waiting for him with Wu Jiang by her side.

"Are you leaving the Holy Central Continent now?" Wu Jiang asked him despite already knowing the answer.

"That's right." Su Yang nodded.

"I see..." Wu Jiang looked at Wu Jingjing and then at Wu Min with a loving gaze.

"Hopefully we can meet again before I perish from this world," he sighed a moment later.

"Why must you say something so depressing before I leave? Are you doing this on purpose so I feel bad?" Wu Jingjing shook her head at him.

"Hahaha... That was not my intention, Jingjing," he laughed out loud, yet the sadness in his eyes could not be hidden.

"I will definitely see you again in the future, father," Wu Jingjing gave him a powerful hug before boarding the flying ship.

"You better keep your words and protect them properly, Su Yang, or I will haunt you even after my death," Wu Jiang said to him.

"I will willingly haunt myself if anything were to happen to them," Su Yang responded with a smile on his face.

"Then I leave my daughter in your care." Wu Jiang extended his hand for a handshake.

Su Yang looked at it for a moment before grabbing it and shaking Wu Jiang's hand.

"Consider yourself lucky. Even though it's only a handshake, I don't willingly touch men often," Su Yang laughed.

"Hmph! You should consider yourself lucky for having someone like Wu Jingjing!" Wu Jiang quickly said.

After their handshake, Su Yang boarded the flying ship with Wu Jingjing and Wu Min.

A few moments later, the flying ship began moving, and it disappeared from Wu Jiang's view almost instantly.

Once the flying ship left the Holy Sword Academy, it flew straight over the Jade Sea and towards the Eastern Continent, completely leaving the Holy Central Continent.

"You're also following us to the Eastern Continent, Your Highness?" Wu Jingjing asked Lian Li in a surprised voice after noticing her presence on the ship.

"Yes, and you can stop addressing me that way, as I am no longer a part of the Lian Family. Just call me 'Sister Li' from now on," Lian Li said to her with a beautiful smile on her face.

Chapter 696 - There's No Harm in Being a Little Forceful, Right?

"How long will it take to get to the Eastern Continent?" Zhu Mengyi asked a few minutes after they left the Holy Central Continent.

"About two days," Xie Wang said.

"Only two days?!" Zhu Mengyi's eyes widened with shock, as she had expected somewhere around two months!

Even Wu Jingjing and Lian Li were surprised to hear that it would only take them 2 days to reach the Eastern Continent, as they always thought each continent was over tens of millions of miles away.

"Let me know when you need help, Su Yang," Xie Xingfang said to him.

"It's fine, this is good training for me, who has an immense amount of spiritual energy," Su Yang said.

"If you need to recharge your energy, you can let me know, Su Yang, and I will gladly assist with my body!" Zhu Mengyi said with a shameless smile on her face.

"M-Me too!" Wu Jingjing said despite feeling embarrassed about it.

"I will also..." Lian Li said in a mumbling voice.

Su Yang nodded, and he continued to focus on controlling the flying ship.

A few hours later, Su Yang stopped to rest.

Seeing this opportunity, Zhu Mengyi handed Zhu Jiayi to Wu Jingjing before grabbing Su Yang by the arm and pulling him into one of the rooms inside the ship.

"You can focus on recovering your energy and let me do all of the work!" Zhu Mengyi said to him as she eagerly removed her clothes.

Su Yang nodded, and he laid on the bed with his eyes closed.

Zhu Mengyi then loosened his clothes just enough for his lower sword to reveal itself.

Seeing the awakened dragon, Zhu Mengyi licked her lips in a s.e.xy manner before she placed it into her mouth. Once Su Yang's dragon and her own phoenix were soaking wet, Zhu Mengyi inserted it into her cave and began riding it as though she was riding a horse.

And since he was constantly being supplied with spiritual energy through Zhu Mengyi's Yin Qi, Su Yang was able to control the flying ship even as they cultivated.

Once he'd recovered enough spiritual energy, Su Yang began moving on his own and switched roles with Zhu Mengyi, becoming the one to please her instead whilst still controlling the flying ship.

A few hours later, when Zhu Mengyi could no longer continue, she said to him, "W-Wait a moment, Su Yang... I will bring Sister Jingjing in here to help you too..."

After putting her clothes on in a hasty manner, Zhu Mengyi went outside to speak with Wu Jingjing.

"Sister Jingjing, do you want to help Su Yang? I can no longer continue," Zhu Mengyi said to her.

"Okay." Wu Jingjing nodded before handing the babies to Zhu Mengyi and heading into Su Yang's room.

"He's cultivating while simultaneously controlling the flying ship? As expected of an Alchemist— his concentration and ability to multitask are simply astounding..." Xie Wang mumbled after seeing this.

"At this rate, we'll return to the Eastern Continent in a day..." Lord Xie said.

"Umm... Senior Lian, can I speak with you for a moment?" Xie Xingfang suddenly approached Lian Li.

"Sure." Lian Li nodded and walked to another corner of the ship where they're alone.

"What do you have for me?" Lian Li then asked.

"Well... This may seem a bit inappropriate, but I would like to know your thoughts on something. You... who is the princess from a family that rules over an entire continent... how are you able to accept a man who is already being shared by other women? And how do you feel about having your man shared by other women?" Xie Xingfang asked her.

"..."

Lian Li did not immediately respond and pondered for a moment before speaking, "I can see where you are coming from— because of our status, we are naturally more selfish than others due to the environment we grew up in. In fact, the higher one's status, the more 'sharing' anything becomes a taboo."

"I also refused Su Yang's advances at first because I knew he already had children with another woman, but after I realized that I wanted to stay by his side no matter what... Well, you know the rest."

"It's actually pretty easy to throw away even the most important things in life to be with someone you truly love— is something I learned through experience. Of course, everyone is different, but I found it relatively easily."

"I see... Thank you for your time, Senior Lian," Xie Xingfang bowed to her before walking away.

'In the end, she's just repeating what grandfather already said but in a different fashion...' Xie Xingfang sighed inwardly.

'Why is it so hard for me? Or is it simply because I do not love Su Yang enough to toss away my pride?' Xie Xingfang proceeded to stare into the horizon with a dazed expression on her face.

A few hours later, Wu Jingjing returned to the outside and looked at Lian Li.

"You don't have to say anything, I'll go next." Lian Li said to Wu Jingjing before she could even open her mouth.

A moment later, Lian Li entered Su Yang's room to cultivate with him.

"Hey, are you going to do something about that princess outside?" Lian Li suddenly asked him.

"You mean Xing'er? Why do you ask?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"Well... I feel like she's the type that won't be able to decide something on her own. I can tell that she really likes you even though we barely know each other, but there's something preventing her from approaching you. Since she already likes you, there's no harm in being a little forceful, right?" Lian Li said to him.

"I understand your intentions, but I won't force her. I have had experience with many women who are very similar to Xing'er, and I can tell you from experience that it's better to let her decide for herself, or it might create conflicts in the future," Su Yang said.

"Is that so..." Lian Li nodded.

A few moments later, they began cultivating.

Chapter 697 - A Third One

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaaa~!"

"Mmmmmh~!"

Lian Li's body glistened with sweat as she cultivated with Su Yang for hours without rest.

"Ahhhh~!"

Lian Li began twitching a few moments later, and her body released Yin Qi for the twentieth time.

"Haaa... haaa... haaa..." Lian Li collapsed onto Su Yang's chest afterward, feeling completely drained.

"We can stop here if you can't continue," Su Yang said to her.

"No... I can handle it," Lian Li said with a resolved— even somewhat forceful expression on her face.

"..."

After staring at her for a moment, Su Yang spoke, "Why are you trying so hard? Is it because of what happened during that incident?"

"I was taught to work hard to fix my mistakes by my mother, and that's what I am trying to do. I also don't want to lose to Wu Jingjing or Zhu Mengyi... and I don't want to be abandoned by you..." Lian Li said with a gloomy expression on her face, looking like she wanted to cry.

Although she was already feeling guilty for what she'd done to Su Yang before being slapped by her mother, the slap by Feng Xindou definitely made her feel more guilty about it afterward.

"..."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang spoke, "Even though I have had countless partners throughout my life, I have never abandoned a woman that I have accepted into my life that didn't deserve it, and you won't be any different. However, if you are still not convinced, we can make this official."

Su Yang then grabbed Lian Li's waist and began thrusting his shaft into her again.

"S-Su Yang?!"

Lian Li didn't expect him to suddenly start moving and m.o.a.ned loudly.

A few moments later, she could feel a load of hot liquid gushing into her stomach and filling her hole.

"W-What is this...?" Lian Li's eyes widened with surprise when she saw a beautiful symbol suddenly appear below her stomach.

"This is a Family Seal— it is proof of our commitment to each other. Although it's not activated yet, once activated, you will officially join my family and become my woman. However, there are a few rules you must abide by as a member of the family. Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing are already a part of my family."

Su Yang proceeded to explain the family rules to Lian Li, who listened with a dazed expression on her face.

"Well? What do you think? Are you willing to commit to our relationship? Even though I am the family head, unless you betray me, I won't be able to abandon you without any reason, or I will suffer a major backlash," Su Yang said to her.

"A-Are you really willing to accept me into your family despite what I did to you?" Lian Li looked at him with disbelief.

Hearing her words, Su Yang bit a hole in his thumb and showed her the blood coming out.

"What do you think?" Su Yang said to her.

Lian Li stared at his bloody finger for a moment before grabbing his hand and slowly pulling it towards the Family Seal on her body.

"I, Lian Li, with heaven as witness, swear that I will never betray you and that I will always remain faithful until the end of time..." Lian Li mumbled in a slow but clear voice as she pressed Su Yang's bloody thumb onto the Family Seal, causing it to glow a golden color.

Meanwhile, almost as though something had attracted their attention, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi suddenly turned to look at Su Yang's room simultaneously.

"Do you also feel that, Sister Jingjing?" Zhu Mengyi asked her.

Wu Jingjing nodded, "Yes... I don't know what it is, but the Family Seal on my body is feeling a bit warm."

"Me too. Do you think it's because Sister Li joined the family and the Family Seal recognized her?" Zhu Mengyi asked.

"That's very likely." Wu Jingjing nodded.

Inside Su Yang's room, Lian Li rubbed the Family Seal on her body with a passionate gaze.

"You know, if you want a child with me, you can just ask," Su Yang suddenly said to her a moment later.

"Eh?" Lian Li looked at him with a surprised look on her face. How did he know that she wanted a baby with him?

"You think I wouldn't notice you staring at Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi? Not to mention the look on your face while you stared at them? Even someone who doesn't understand romance would be able to tell your desires," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"It was that obvious...?" Lian Li lowered her head slightly to hide the embarrassment on her blushing face.

"Then... if you don't mind, just like Sister Jingjing and Sister Mengyi, I also want to bear your child," she said a moment later.

Su Yang nodded and said, "As you wish."

He then laid Lian Li's glistening body on the bed before moving his h.i.p.s again.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaah~!"

"Aaaahn~!"

Almost as though the Family Seal had boosted her endurance, Lian Li was able to continue without much rest, and she managed to endure a few more hours of intense cultivation with Su Yang before finishing with a load of fertile Yang Qi gushing into the deepest part of her cave and filling every nook and cranny inside.

"Thank you, Su Yang, for everything..." Lian Li mumbled in an exhausted voice before falling asleep on the bed.

Su Yang then removed his shaft from Lian Li's body before sealing her cave with a special talisman, containing his Yang Qi within her body.

'Three children already, huh? I have only been in this world for a little over a year and I already have two children with another one coming in the near future. Who knows how many children I'll have by the time we return to the Divine Heavens?' Su Yang wondered silently with a profound smile on his face, feeling an indescribable emotion within his heart right now.

Chapter 698 - Hundreds of Millions

After covering the sleeping Lian Li with a blanket, Su Yang left the room and headed outside again.

And the instant he went outside, Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi approached him with excited expressions on their beautiful faces.

"Did you just give Sister Li your Family Seal?" Zhu Mengyi asked him with bright eyes.

"I felt my Family Seal reacting sometime ago!" Wu Jingjing said.

Seeing their reaction, Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face, "Yes, Lian Li is also a part of our family now. She's sleeping now."

"Family Seal? What is that?" When the Xie Family overheard their conversation, Xie Wang decided to ask out of sheer curiosity.

"A Family Seal is something the head of a family gives to their partners, indicating that they belong to a certain family. Of course, Family Seals are not that common as it only exists in families with harems," Su Yang explained to them.

"Here, this is what a Family Seal looks like—" Zhu Mengyi slightly adjusted her clothes to show off her Family Seal to the Xie Family, feeling like a child trying to show off her achievements.

"..."

Lord Xie and Xie Wang blushed slightly when they saw Zhu Mengyi's peerless skin, feeling envious of Su Yang that he'd managed to secure not one, not two, but three peerless beauties in a single trip to the Holy Central Continent.

'This lucky f.u.c.ker... If given enough time, he might actually seduce every single woman on the Eastern Continent!' Lord Xie cried inwardly.

"So... does this mean you are basically husband and wives?" Xie Xingfang suddenly asked.

"There is no such thing as wives or concubines in the Su Family, as I treat and love everyone the same amount no matter their status or background," Su Yang said to her.

"Treating everyone the same..." Xie Xingfang mumbled with a profound look in her gaze.

"How many people are in your family now, Su Yang?" Xie Wang suddenly asked.

"Oh, I also want to know the answer to that question," Zhu Mengyi said with curiosity on her face.

Even Wu Jingjing turned to stare at him in silence.

"Not including the people on this flying ship and the Divine Heavens, there are only three other women who have accepted my Family Seal," Su Yang said.

"Only three?" Everybody on the boat reacted to his response with surprise, as they truly didn't expect such a low number from someone like him.

"What's with the reactions? You think I hand out Family Seals like candy and give them to every woman I cultivate with?" Su Yang shook his head at their reactions.

"While I don't expect you to give it to every woman you sleep with, I sure didn't expect the number to be that low!" Lord Xie was the first to respond.

Su Yang then coldly snorted and said, "Considering the small number of women I have cultivated with while in this world, giving six Family Seal is already a shockingly high number. Despite cultivating with hundreds of millions of women in my previous life, I have given out less than 100 Family Seals!"

"W-Wait a damn second, Su Yang! H-Hundreds of millions of women? How is that even possible?!" Lord Xie was the first to question the ridiculous amount of women Su Yang claimed to have cultivated with.

"When you're as handsome as me and with Yang Qi that has the same effect as valuable treasures that can boost one's cultivation base, women would flock to you even if you do nothing but breath. In my previous life, whenever I would visit any city, there would always be a line of beautiful women willing to cultivate with me, and that line would not disappear for days on end even if I cultivated nonstop," Su Yang spoke in a prideful voice. "And hundreds of millions is only a humble estimate!"

And he continued, "Furthermore, because of my Celestial Constitution, I was even called 'living treasure' at one point."

"Celestial Constitution? How is that any different than Heavenly Constitutions?" Xie Wang asked Su Yang with a baffled look on his face.

"Celestial Constitution is above Heavenly Constitutions but it cannot be obtained by birth. The only way one can obtain a Celestial Constitution is by gathering and merging over 100,000 Heavenly Constitutions together. Meaning, I had to cultivate with over 100,000 maidens who had a Heavenly Constitution," Su Yang explained to him.

"100,000 Heavenly Constitutions?!" Xie Wang's jaw dropped to the floor, as it was an immense number that he cannot even begin to comprehend.

"If it can only be created by merging 100,000 Heavenly Constitutions together, it must be unimaginably powerful, right? What does it even mean to have a Celestial Constitution?" Lord Xie asked him with a fascinated look on his face.

"Not really," Su Yang shook his head and said, "Only those with Celestial Qi in their body can take advantage of a Celestial Constitution, and since I did not have Celestial Qi in my previous life, I was unable to take advantage of my Celestial Constitution. As for what one could do with a body that contained the Celestial Constitution... legend has it that you can ascend to true godhood and take control of the universe and everything within it as you will."

"Control everything within the Universe...? Not even Heaven has such an ability!" Xie Wang exclaimed in a dumbfounded voice.

"Well, although there have been people that had managed to achieve a Celestial Constitution before me, they all perished before they could ascend to godhood, so it's only a legend." Su Yang shrugged his shoulders.

And he continued, "Anyway, we are only a few minutes away from reaching the Eastern Continent."

Over the next few minutes, everyone on the flying ship was silently thinking to themselves what Su Yang had just told them.

'Su Yang... he is countless times more amazing than I thought...' Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi had similar thoughts.

'Just what kind of status did Su Yang hold in his previous life...?' Lord Xie pondered.

'How did someone so amazing end up dying and coming to this world?' Xie Wang wondered.

'Hundreds of millions of women...' Xie Xingfang sighed inwardly.

Chapter 699 - Peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm

"We have returned to the Eastern Continent," Su Yang said to them a few minutes later.

"Oooh!" Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing looked at the unfamiliar scenery with excitement.

However, the moment they tasted the Profound Qi in the air, frowns immediately appeared on their faces.

"I don't mean to be rude but the Profound Qi here..." Zhu Mengyi shook her head before looking at Xie Wang and continuing, "I'm surprised you even made it to the Sovereign Spirit Realm with the quality of Profound Qi in this place..."

"I am speechless... How do people even cultivate in this kind of environment?" Wu Jingjing also sighed, feeling like she'd accidentally traveled to a dirty place.

"Uhh..."

Even the Xie Family couldn't help but express disgust on their faces after experiencing the low-quality Profound Qi in the Eastern Continent once again, especially when they just got used to the high-quality Profound Qi in the Holy Central Continent.

"Now that I have experienced the Profound Qi in the Holy Central Continent, the Profound Qi in this place feels especially bad— it's like comparing a cup of fresh and clean water to muddy water..." Xie Wang sighed loudly.

"Heavens... Was the Profound Qi in this place always this bad? I would never have realized this if I did not experience the Profound Qi at the Holy Central Continent for myself!" Lord Xie held a face of disbelief on his face, feeling like he'd entered a new and unfamiliar land.

"Hahaha... Now you know how I feel, except it's not as bad as my situation!" Su Yang laughed out loud after seeing their reaction. "If you knew just how pure the Profound Qi in the Divine Heavens are before coming here— you would be physically crying right now!"

"Now that you mention it, you plan on returning to the Divine Heavens, right? How are we going to get there from here?" Zhu Mengyi suddenly asked him.

"There's this portal in the Southern Continent that could potentially teleport us to the Divine Heavens. Although it's not confirmed, it's very likely to be the case," Su Yang said.

"I cannot wait to go to the Divine Heavens with you, Su Yang. I wonder how much it differs from this world," Wu Jingjing said, her heart filled with curiosity.

"I also cannot wait to start exploring!" Zhu Mengyi said.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "Unfortunately, you do not have the capabilities to explore the Divine Heavens in your current state. The Heavenly Spirit Realm is no different than a mortal in that world, and if you want to explore the world safely, you will need to cultivate at least a few hundred years or be accompanied by someone powerful."

"A few hundred years...?" Zhu Mengyi looked at him with wide eyes, as it was a number that she could not even comprehend.

"Anyways, we can talk more about the Divine Heavens later. We have returned to Snowfall City now." Su Yang said as he stopped the flying ship above where the Celestial Pond was located.

"It also looks like the girls have managed to leave the Celestial Pond on time," Lord Xie said as he looked at Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples at the bottom.

Sometime later, after waking up Lian Li, everyone descended from the flying ship and landed before Liu Lanzhi and the others disciples.

"Welcome back, Su Yang..." Liu Lanzhi said to him in a somewhat dejected voice, not even questioning about the new faces.

"Hm? What happened? Why do you girls look so dispirited?" Su Yang looked at her and the other disciples with a puzzled look.

Besides Yan Yan, everyone there had a gloomy expression on their faces.

"Well..."

Liu Lanzhi turned to look at Yan Yan before sighing, "Take a look at our cultivation bases and you should understand..."

Hearing her words, Su Yang and everyone there looked at their cultivation base.

"What on earth?" Lord Xie's eyes widened with shock after seeing their cultivation bases.

"What in heaven's name happened inside the Celestial Pond?!" Xie Wang exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"This is truly unexpected..." Even Su Yang was surprised by the results.

Except for Yan Yan, Liu Lanzhi, and the other two disciples somehow only managed to increase their cultivation base by a single level. Meanwhile, Yan Yan, who was at the seventh level Earth Spirit Realm before entering the Celestial Pond had somehow soared all the way to the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm in these seven days, surpassing even Su Yang's cultivation base.

"How did this happen?" Xie Xingfang suddenly asked.

"I can imagine what had happened, but I'll let them explain it," Su Yang said with a smile.

Liu Lanzhi nodded and said, "Well, everything was normal when we first entered the Celestial Pond, but as we approached our second day cultivating in the Celestial Pond, all of the spiritual energy suddenly disappeared."

"I was completely baffled at first, but when I saw Yan Yan's cultivation base, I can guess what had happened..." Liu Lanzhi sighed.

Once Liu Lanzhi stopped talking, Su Yang spoke, "Because of Yan Yan's talents, she'd absorbed all seven days worth of spiritual energy in a single day."

"Then you girls stopped cultivating in the Celestial Pond after the first day and have been waiting here since then?" Xie Xingfang asked in a dazed voice.

"Yes..." Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples nodded in a dispirited manner.

"That's... I don't know what I should say in this kind of situation..." Lord Xie shook his head. Since the Celestial Pond needed 100 years to recover, there was nothing they could really do in this situation.

"Although it's quite depressing that I didn't get to cultivate in the Celestial Pond for as long as I'd hoped, at least the spiritual energy wasn't wasted. Yan Yan managed to reach the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm at such a young age— I should be celebrating as the Sect Master instead of being depressed," Liu Lanzhi said with a bittersweet smile on her face, trying to find the positive in this situation.

Chapter 700 - It Just Happened

"As you'd just said, there's no need to be upset. However, since you did receive the short end of the stick this time, I'll find a way to make it up to the three of you later," Su Yang said to them with a smile on his face.

"Really? Something as beneficial as the Celestial Pond?" Liu Lanzhi's hopes immediately became alive again.

"Yes," Su Yang nodded.

"Anyway, now that we have the Four Element Roots, let's concoct the pill and prepare for the Abandoned Forest," Su Yang said a moment later.

"Okay." They all nodded.

Sometime later, as they returned to the Xie Family's household, Liu Lanzhi finally noticed the three peerless beauties that were following them, and she asked, "By the way... these three young ladies are..."

"Hm? Oh, right. I forgot to introduce them because of what happened," Su Yang said before he pointed to them and continued, "Starting from the left side, we have Wu Jingjing, Zhu Mengyi, and Lian Li, and they are from the Holy Central Continent. Though, they'll be following me starting today."

"They followed you all the way from the Holy Central Continent? Why?" Liu Lanzhi did not immediately think of them as Su Yang's lovers, as the possibility of Su Yang having children was near zero in her mind.

"Why, you ask? Why else would I have beauties following me?" Su Yang laughed in a low voice.

Hearing his words, Liu Lanzhi's eyes immediately widened from shock.

"What?! You seduced two women with children of their own already? That's quite ridiculous even for someone like you, Su Yang!" Liu Lanzhi exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"Uhh... I think you are misunderstanding something..." Wu Jingjing suddenly said to Liu Lanzhi.

"Misunderstanding? What am I misunderstanding?" Liu Lanzhi tilted her head in a puzzled manner.

"These children... they're Su Yang's children..." Wu Jingjing said, revealing the truth to her.

"WHAT?!" Liu Lanzhi immediately tripped on her own feet after hearing Wu Jingjing's words, facepalming the ground with her beautiful face.

"Are you okay...?" They looked at her with dumbfounded looks.

However, Liu Lanzhi did not respond. Hell, she didn't even try to get off the ground and remained laying on the ground with her face kissing the dirt until a few moments later.

"T-T-T-They are... y-your... children...? Su Yang? Really?" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with an expression he'd never seen her make before.

"That's right. They're both my daughter," Su Yang nodded with a prideful expression on his face. "That's Wu Min, and that's Zhu Jiayi."

"Heavens... I never thought I'd see this day..." Liu Lanzhi mumbled in a dazed voice.

"..."

Even the disciples were staring at Su Yang with baffled looks on their faces, as it was also quite shocking for them.

"T-The other disciples don't know about this yet, right? I cannot imagine how they will react once they learn about this..." Liu Lanzhi said as her body trembled slightly.

Sometime later, once Liu Lanzhi calmed down enough, they continued walking back to Snowfall City.

"I still cannot believe it, Su Yang. What made you want to have children? You don't look like the type to willingly have children..." Liu Lanzhi asked him afterward.

"It just happened," Su Yang shrugged.

"I was the one who asked him to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e me," Wu Jingjing suddenly said. "Although I did say that I won't make him bear responsibility at first, it still happened in the end."

"Me too!" Zhu Mengyi said.

"Unbelievable..." Liu Lanzhi was speechless.

Sometime later, once they returned to the Xie Family's household, Su Yang said to Xie Wang, "Bring out all of the ingredients required for the poison pill."

"Right away." Xie Wang nodded before leaving the scene.

A few minutes later, Xie Wang returned with the ingredients.

"Here you go."

"Do you have any decent pill cauldrons in this house? My ordinary cauldron might not be able to handle the strength of the pill."

"We do have a pill room," Lord Xie nodded.

"Follow me."

Su Yang and everybody there followed Lord Xie to the pill room a few minutes later.

"This is usually used by my Xie Family's Alchemists," Lord Xie said. "Use it as you please."

Once he was inside the room, Su Yang laid out all of the ingredients on the floor before sitting in front of the cauldron.

"Mengyi, I will need your assistance for this one," Su Yang suddenly said.

"Huh? You need my help?" Zhu Mengyi raised her eyebrows.

"Yes, your Azure Flames to be precise. My ordinary flames won't be powerful enough to melt the Four Elements Root," he said.

"But I have never used the Four Element Roots before," she shook her head. "I might screw up the entire thing."

"It's fine. I just need you to keep your Azure Flames active and at the highest temperature for a few minutes. I'll control it for you," Su Yang said.

"You'll control my Azure Flames? Is that even possible?" Zhu Mengyi's eyes widened at his words, as this is her first time hearing of such a thing.

"Yes, I'll also use my own alchemy flames to control and adjust your Azure Flames whilst adding to the temperature myself until it reaches the perfect temperature. You just need to keep your own temperature steady so I don't have to adjust too much."

"Okay." Zhu Mengyi nodded. She then handed Zhu Jiayi to Wu Jingjing before sitting on the other side of the cauldron.

"Ready when you are," she said.

"Go ahead."

Hearing his words, Zhu Mengyi activated her Azure Flames around the pill cauldron.

"Keep it at your max temperature, I'll do the rest," Su Yang said to her as he brought out his own ordinary alchemy flames that did not lose to her Azure Flames' fierceness in the slightest.

Once the pill cauldron reached the perfect temperature, Su Yang used his spiritual energy to toss in the ingredients one at a time.

A few minutes later, only the Four Elements Root remained untouched. After taking a deep breath, Su Yang also tossed the Four Elements Root into the cauldron.